A HISTORY OF OREGON

CLARK
DOWN
BLUE

ST 118
. 8

Courtesy of American Museum of Natural History

TOTEM POLES MADE BY THE INDIANS OF NORTHWEST AMERICA

A HISTORY *of* OREGON

By

ROBERT CARLTON CLARK, PH.D.
Head of the Department of History
UNIVERSITY OF OREGON

ROBERT HORACE DOWN, M.A.
Head of the Department of History
FRANKLIN HIGH SCHOOL, PORTLAND

GEORGE VERNE BLUE, M.A.
Professor of History
UNIVERSITY OF HAWAII

ROW, PETERSON AND COMPANY
CHICAGO NEW YORK

Copyright 1926
ROW, PETERSON AND COMPANY

Second Printing

PREFACE

THE introduction of Oregon History as a subject to be studied in the elementary school has been brought about by the combined efforts of four organizations: The History Teachers' Section of the Oregon State Teachers' Association, the Sons and Daughters of Oregon Pioneers, the Oregon Historical Society, and the Oregon Pioneer Association. Mr. Harvey G. Starkweather deserves special mention for his efforts in this matter. While president of the History Teachers' Section mentioned above, he brought the question of teaching Oregon history to the attention of the Superintendent of Public Instruction and helped to bring about the introduction of it as a subject of instruction as early as 1921.

This volume, designed for use as a textbook in such a course, gives a brief account of the more important events in the history of our state and of the great Oregon Country of which it forms a part. It should be studied, and its contents mastered, so that the school children of Oregon may become acquainted with the careers of those men and women who have helped to make the state, and so that they may come to understand the influences which have shaped our state life and institutions.

In so small a book it has not been possible to relate all the interesting incidents connected with the history of Oregon. The narrative here presented needs to be supplemented by other accounts to be found elsewhere. The list of additional readings at the conclusion of each chapter gives references to the more available books of value in this connection. Although some of the books mentioned are no longer in print, and so cannot readily be bought, they are included in the lists because they are still to be found in many school libraries which have been so built up as to include valuable publications relating to the history of our

state. Such a collection of books on Oregon history should be formed in every school. That may be done effectively by enlisting the coöperation of the State Library staff, at Salem, whose members will gladly advise and assist in the purchase of such books.

The questions presented at the conclusion of each chapter are not offered as all that may be asked. The alert teacher will readily think of many others which will serve as well to fix the information given in the text, and, in addition, to supplement it and make clear its wider implication. Such questions should require pupils to think; they should stimulate the pupil's imagination. The teacher, too, should ever seek to find new stories and new accounts of incidents to relate to the class.

The authors wish to thank Mr. Frederick V. Holman, President of the Oregon Historical Society, Mr. George H. Himes, its Curator, and Miss Nellie B. Pipes, its Librarian, for their kindness in giving this book a searching reading, calling attention to errors, and making suggestions that improve the text.

The cover design is engraved from a medal made by Professor Avard Fairbanks, of the University of Oregon School of Fine Arts, for the *Old Oregon Trail Association*, to be used as a marker along the route of the Oregon Trail. We are indebted both to the artist and to the management of the Association for their kind permission to make use of the design. The illustration pictures vividly and with historical accuracy the method of travel along the road to Oregon in early days, and it gives some idea of the courage of those pioneers who peopled this Northwest Country.

The authors wish to make grateful acknowledgment to Miss Cornelia Marvin, State Librarian, for many helpful suggestions in the preparation of the manuscript and for sympathetic interest and encouragement.

THE AUTHORS

April, 1926

CONTENTS

CHAPTER		PAGE
I	Geography of the Oregon Country	1
II	The Indians of Oregon	16
III	The Discovery of the Northwest Coast	37
IV	The Pacific Fur Trade	53
V	The Overland Search for the Western Sea	73
VI	The Lewis and Clark Expedition	82
VII	Astor's Enterprise in Oregon	97
VIII	The Rule of the British Fur Companies	112
IX	American Trappers and Fur Traders	131
X	Missionaries in Oregon	146
XI	Making a Government for Oregon	163
XII	The American Occupation of Oregon	183
XIII	Pioneer Life in Oregon	198
XIV	The Boundary Dispute	213
XV	Oregon as a Territory	231
XVI	Indian Wars in the Oregon Country	244
XVII	Social Progress in Oregon: 1849-1925	262
XVIII	Early Industrial Progress in Oregon	286
XIX	Oregon as a State	305
XX	Economic Progress Since 1870	326
	Index	351

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

PAGE

Totem Poles Made by the Indians of Northwest America ..... *Frontispiece*
A Fir Forest of the Coast Range Mountains 4
The Columbia River Gorge 6
Elk Lake and the South Sister, Cascade Mountains 8
Mount Jefferson 10
Head-deforming Cradle 17
A Chinook Cradle 20
Chief Maquina 24
Images Carved by Indians of the Northwest Coast 27
A Chinook Indian Lodge in 1841 29
Chinook Burial Canoe 33
Sir Francis Drake 42
The Golden Hind 43
A Manila Galleon 45
Captain James Cook 48
The Indian Settlement on Nootka Sound 50
George Vancouver 51
Male and Female Fur Seal 54
The Launching of *The Northwest America* 56
The Ship *Columbia* and the Sloop *Lady Washington* ... 60
Captain Robert Gray 61
The Ship *Columbia* 63
Captain Meares in the Strait of Juan de Fuca 66
Alexander Mackenzie 77
Thomas Jefferson 83
Meriwether Lewis 84
William Clark 86
Gorge of the Columbia River at the Cascades 90

PAGE

John Jacob Astor 99
Fort Astoria in 1813 102
The Columbia River at The Dalles 105
Fort Walla Walla in 1841 113
Dr. John McLoughlin 118
A Beaver at Work 124
Fort Vancouver in 1845 125
Nathaniel J. Wyeth 134
Fort Hall 139
Bridger's Fort 141
Joseph L. Meek 143
Sir George Simpson 147
First Methodist Mission in the Willamette Valley 152
The Methodist Mission at The Dalles in 1840 154
The Oregon Institute 156
The Willamette Valley as It Is Today 164
Willamette Falls at Oregon City 168
Crossing the Blue Mountains in 1843 186
Marker Used by the Old Oregon Trail Association 189
Crossing the Plains en Route to Oregon 192
Immigrants at the End of the Trail 194
Model of a House Built in 1842 200
The Pioneer 202
The Cabin of a Settler on a Timber Claim 205
The Circuit Rider 211
Thomas H. Benton 221
Lewis F. Linn 223
James K. Polk 226
General Joseph Lane 234
The *Lot Whitcomb:* The Second Steamboat Built in Oregon 241
North Abutment of the Bridge of the Gods 250
Chief Joseph 252

PAGE

Deady Hall: University of Oregon 263
Multnomah County School Bus 264
High School at Grant's Pass, Josephine County 266
Lincoln High School at Portland 267
Jefferson High School at Portland 268
Typical One-Room School 269
Union High School in Clackamas County 271
Willamette University Buildings at Salem 272
The High School at Corvallis 274
Administration Building: University of Oregon 276
The Normal Training School at Monmouth 277
Agricultural Hall: Oregon Agricultural College 279
Oregon State Hospital at Salem 281
School Building at Hayesville, Marion County 282
Rural Book Service of the Multnomah County Library. 283
Salmon Fishing on the Columbia River 287
A Hudson's Bay Company Steamer 291
Oregon City in 1845 292
Pacific Highway Bridge Over the Rogue River 300
Portland, Oregon, in 1851 302
Capitol Building at Salem 306
Oregon State School for the Blind 308
A Highway Scene in Douglas County 310
Oregon State Industrial School for Girls 312
Scene on the Columbia River Highway 315
Portland with Mount Hood in the Background 319
Oregon State Tuberculosis Hospital 322
The First Locomotive Used in Oregon 331
A Steamer Leaving the Cascade Locks 332
An Irrigation Dam on the Rogue River 341
A Flock of Eastern Oregon Sheep 343
Great Sawmills at Bend, Oregon 345
A Salmon Packing Plant at Astoria 346

MAPS

FACING PAGE

Relief Map of Washington and Oregon..... 13
The Indians of the Oregon Country..... 18
Location of the Oregon Country..... 39
The Oregon Country in 1803..... 74
Route of the Lewis and Clark Expedition..... 95
The Settlements of Western Oregon..... 173
Route of the Oregon Trail..... 191
Map to Illustrate the Boundary Dispute..... 216
The Industries of Oregon..... 326

A History of Oregon

CHAPTER I

GEOGRAPHY OF THE OREGON COUNTRY

THE name *Oregon* was first applied to the river which we now know as the *Columbia*. This region, which was at first called simply Northwestern America, was afterward known as the Columbia River Country. It was not until about 1820 that the name *Oregon* came to be used. At first the whole of the Pacific Northwest, or the part of it lying west of the Rocky Mountains and north of the forty-second parallel of latitude as far as the southern boundary of Alaska, was included under this name. In 1824 its northern boundary became fixed at the parallel of latitude designated as fifty-four degrees and forty minutes (54°40′), and in 1846 at the forty-ninth parallel of latitude. Within those limits — the Rocky Mountains on the east, the forty-second parallel of latitude on the south, and the forty-ninth parallel of latitude on the north — was included what are now the states of Oregon, Washington, and Idaho, together with a considerable part of Montana and Wyoming. The region had an area of two hundred eighty thousand square miles. In 1859, when Oregon became a state, it was given its present boundaries. The

following pages tell the story of the land known as *Oregon* throughout all the changes during which the region has been successively called the Oregon Country, Oregon Territory, and the State of Oregon.

Importance of the geography of Oregon. In order better to understand how the Oregon Country was discovered, explored, and settled, we must keep clearly before us the main geographical characteristics of the region. We must know the location of the mountains, we must know by what courses the rivers reach the sea, and we must know where the fertile valleys fit for settlement are to be found. We shall also need to know something about the soil and the climate, and about the minerals and other natural resources. An acquaintance with such facts helps to make clear why one part of the region was settled earlier than another part, and why some sections are more densely populated than others.

The discovery of the Oregon Country. The people whom we know as Indians were the first discoverers of this region. They discovered it many thousands of years ago by crossing Kamchatka, or eastern Siberia, and using the islands in the Bering Sea as stepping-stones by which to reach the coast of America that lay not far distant. The Russians, at a more recent date, also made their way across from Asia by the Bering Sea route, discovered Alaska, and later occupied it.

Since the Oregon Country is washed by the Pacific Ocean, it was to be expected that people more civilized than the Indians would first reach it by water. In most instances the ocean is the natural way, and the easiest

one, by which people leave their old homes to find new ones. China and Japan, densely populated countries, lie across the Pacific Ocean opposite this country. Why then did not those peoples discover and settle the North American continent? Because, two hundred years ago, Chinese and Japanese did not dare to sail their vessels so far from home. Today, when they otherwise might seek to make their homes on the Pacific coast of North America they find it occupied by another people, the present inhabitants, who oppose their coming.

After the Indians, the ships of Spanish sailors were first to reach this northwestern coast of America. Following the Spanish ships, Russian, English, and American vessels entered the waters of this region. The men who first came by sea barely touched the fringe of the continent. Its natural inlets were for a long time unseen, and its interior was only slightly penetrated by those who approached by way of the Pacific Ocean. We shall be better able to understand why this was the case by making some study of the coast first touched by those early sea voyagers.

The coast of the Oregon Country. From the California line to the Strait of Juan de Fuca the Oregon coast consists of sandy stretches of beach, of high rocky bluffs, and of lofty headlands that jut into the ocean. The Coast Range Mountains, which extend northward and southward, are but a few miles inland from the sea. These mountains vary in height from a few hundred feet to several thousand feet above the sea level. Mount Olympus, in northwestern Washington, rises to more than eight thousand feet; Mary's Peak, the highest eleva-

tion in Oregon, is about four thousand feet high. Because of the great rainfall, the mountains are heavily timbered with forests of fir, pine, and spruce. In southern Oregon the Coast Range merges with the Rogue River Range and the Siskiyou Mountains, which extend eastward to connect with the Cascade Range.

A FIR FOREST OF THE COAST RANGE MOUNTAINS

Rivers and inlets of the Pacific Coast. Some of the rivers that empty into the ocean along the Oregon and Washington coast make their way through the Coast Range Mountains. Among these are the Rogue, Umpqua, Columbia, and Chehalis rivers. Most of the streams that flow into the Pacific Ocean along this coast have their sources in the Coast Range Mountains. The

more important of these are the Coquille, Siuslaw, Yaquina, and Nehalem rivers. All these rivers empty into bays or inlets which admit ocean-going vessels, and almost all of them are navigable for a few miles above their mouths. The Columbia River is navigable by large vessels for a full hundred miles. Besides the entrance to the Columbia River, the more important bays and inlets on the Oregon and Washington coasts are Coos, Umpqua, Yaquina, Tillamook, and Willapa bays, and Gray's Harbor. The first American vessel to reach this coast entered one of these inlets, probably that now called Tillamook Bay. Before reaching the sea these coast streams water fertile valleys whose green meadows pasture cattle the whole year round, and whose soil is suitable for certain kinds of agriculture. Such grassy meadows make possible the great dairying industry that thrives in the region along the coast.

The Columbia River: Its great importance. The Columbia River has its source in the snow-covered ridges of the Canadian Rockies. Until it closely approaches the forty-sixth parallel of latitude, its course is generally southward; there it turns westward. In its southward course it is joined by large tributaries which also come from the Rocky Mountains. The more important of these are the Kootenai, Clark's Fork, Spokane, and Snake rivers; the last named may really be considered the great south fork of the Columbia. The Snake River flows a thousand miles from its source in Yellowstone Park to the point where it joins the Columbia.

The Columbia River runs a thousand four hundred miles from its source to the Pacific Ocean. To reach

the sea it makes its way through both the Cascade Range and the Coast Range mountains. It provides the chief way, and the easiest, by which to reach the interior of the Oregon Country, or for going from the interior down to the sea. In the earliest times those trips were made in canoes, in later times by steamboat. In crossing the Cascade Range, and in extending their lines to

THE COLUMBIA RIVER GORGE

the sea, the railroad builders followed the river's channel and thus avoided the steep grades. The river is navigable by steamboats. Ocean-going vessels can go as far as Portland; lighter vessels can navigate the Columbia and the Snake for a distance of five hundred seventy miles. The Columbia and its many tributaries drain an area of about two hundred ninety-eight thousand square miles. Before reaching the Pacific Ocean the Columbia is joined by other important rivers, among them the

Umatilla, John Day, Deschutes, and the Willamette. Of these the Willamette has been of greatest importance.

From earliest times the Columbia River has played an important part in the life of this region. It has furnished easy access to the interior from the sea, and, in turn, from the interior to the sea. Its valleys provide fertile farm lands, its waters yield excellent salmon. The salmon, which in early days were the most important food of the Indians, have in recent times supplied the raw material for the great packing and storing plants, an important industry of this region.

The waters of Puget Sound. Puget Sound is the name that applies to the two thousand miles of waterways which penetrate the land in northwestern Washington. The Strait of Juan de Fuca connects it with the Pacific Ocean. The sound admits ocean-going vessels some eighty miles into the interior. Its waters abound in fish, of which there are said to be fifty varieties. This abundance of fish, and the landlocked waters, safe for Indian canoes, explain why this region was in earlier times so densely populated by Indians. They lived there because a supply of food was very easily secured in the region. The importance of the harbors and the commercial advantages of Puget Sound were early appreciated by white settlers. It is plain why the government of the United States insisted so strongly that the boundary of our country be fixed at the forty-ninth parallel of latitude. Only thus could we make sure of the possession of Puget Sound.

The valleys of western Oregon. A number of valleys are enclosed between the Cascade Mountains and

the Coast Range. Southward from Puget Sound, on the Washington side of the Columbia River, are the fertile valleys of the Lewis, Kalama, and Cowlitz rivers, which enclose an area of about a hundred square miles. The most important of these valleys is that of the Willamette River. Some two hundred miles in length, and varying in width from a few miles to more than sixty

ELK LAKE AND THE SOUTH SISTER, CASCADE MOUNTAINS

miles, this contains about twelve thousand square miles of territory. The Willamette River enters the Columbia River from the south. On each side it is joined by several large tributaries which also water fertile valleys. Near Eugene, three streams, the Mackenzie, Middle Fork, and Coast Fork rivers, join to form the main stream of the Willamette River. The Willamette Valley was the goal of the first settlers who came to the Oregon Coun-

try. To reach that region they crossed great stretches of land now known to be very valuable. The treeless prairies of the Willamette Valley, its abundant rainfall, its mild climate, the freedom from Indians, and the easy access to the sea were its attractions. Much of the land needed no clearing. It could be turned with the plow so soon as the settler had taken up his claim. These inland valleys, together with the region around Puget Sound, were the first parts of the Oregon Country to be settled. Because of the great productiveness of their soil, and on account of their other commercial advantages, they have become the most densely populated. In them the large cities are located.

The Umpqua and Rogue River valleys. The Calapooia Mountains, which run from east to west between the Cascade and Coast ranges, separate the Willamette and the Umpqua rivers. The Umpqua River has its source in the Cascade Mountains and flows into the Pacific Ocean. Its valley contains some three thousand square miles of land which is suitable for cultivation. The course of the Rogue River is similar to that of the Umpqua. The soil of the Umpqua River Valley yields abundant crops. The mountains of this region were once rich in minerals. The rich mines near the present site of Jacksonville attracted the first settlers to southern Oregon.

The Cascade Mountains. The mountains of the Cascade Range stretch more than five hundred miles, from the California line to Canada. Their most striking features are their "great isolated snow peaks, stationed like sentinels at intervals of from thirty to sixty

miles through all this distance." There are fifteen of these great peaks, ranging in height from nine thousand to fourteen thousand feet. On account of their height these mountains gather the moisture of the clouds which float eastward from the Pacific Ocean; the moisture then falls as snow and rain upon their slopes. For this reason they are heavily timbered, and their forests, together

MOUNT JEFFERSON

with those of the Coast Range, constitute one-fourth of the timber supply of the United States.

On account of the steepness of their slopes the Cascade Mountains have been a great obstacle to travel from eastern to western Oregon. The first pioneers were obliged to travel by boat from the dalles of the Columbia to the Willamette River. Even after roads were opened south of Mount Hood, great hardships were suffered in

making the passage over the Cascade Mountains. The first railroad through these mountains, south of the Columbia River, is just now being built; it is called the Natron Cut-off.

The Inland Empire. The vast region between the Cascade Mountains and the Rockies, which comprises perhaps two-thirds of the original Oregon Country, is known as the *Inland Empire*. Within it are several well-defined sections. It is "mainly a continuous prairie, or series of prairies and valleys, wheat land, orchard land, garden land, fertile, beautiful, attractive, broken by an occasional mountain spur, as the irregular mass of the Blue Mountains, but substantially an inhabited land, reaching from Colville, Spokane, and the Okanogan River on the north to the Klamath River Valley on the south, a region five hundred miles long by two hundred miles wide." This is the region through which the early pioneers hurried to reach the Willamette Valley. The richness of the soil in the Columbia River basin, especially for the production of wheat, was not known to the first immigrants. They passed the region by. Besides, it was inhabited by Indians who were hostile to white settlement, and as there were few Indians in the Willamette Valley the early pioneers settled the latter region first.

Characteristics of the Oregon Country. Three important geographical characteristics make Oregon what it is. First is the mighty Columbia River system, whose waters irrigate the desert and make a garden of it. It provides a means of travel from one part of Oregon to another, and makes possible an ocean com-

merce with other regions of the world. The second distinguishing feature is Puget Sound, which has already

Courtesy of Leland Stanford Jr. University

RELIEF MAP OF WASHINGTON AND OREGON

been described. The other striking geographical feature which gives the Oregon Country a distinctive character is its mountains. These store up the winter snows that

keep the rivers flowing through the summer months, they support the forests which are Oregon's largest single source of wealth, and they give beauty and grandeur to every landscape.

Natural resources that attract men to Oregon. The history of Oregon could be written as the story of her natural resources and how these have drawn men to the region. First of the natural products which attracted people to the Northwest Coast was furs. Men came to catch the sea otter and the seal, and to trade with the Indians of the region for the furs of those and other animals. Later, other men came overland to establish posts which would serve as gathering points for those engaged in trapping the fur-bearing animals that were found in great abundance along every stream of the Oregon Country. After about fifty years, the beaver, the sea otter, and other such fur-bearing animals were almost exterminated, and the region's resources of furs were nearly exhausted.

Then, for a few years, mining was a great attraction. Gold and other minerals were discovered in southern and eastern Oregon, and along the Fraser River in the north. The mines drew many people to those regions. After a few years the riches of the mines were exhausted, and they ceased to yield ore in paying quantities. Then they no longer attracted people as before.

Agricultural lands had from an early time drawn many people to Oregon, especially into the Willamette Valley. After the exhaustion of furs and minerals, agriculture became the principal concern of Oregon settlers and the great attraction of the country to outsiders. Southern

and eastern Oregon, at one time chiefly occupied by miners, later became better known for their stock ranches and as fruit and grain-raising regions.

Another great natural resource of Oregon is timber. Logging and lumbering have become the leading industry of the state; they yield great wealth. It is interesting to note that the first important industries, the gathering of furs and mining, have sunk into insignificance as compared with agriculture and lumbering.

ADDITIONAL READINGS

In an encyclopædia, find the article on *Oregon.* Read there a longer description of the country than is given in this chapter. In your geography, look up and read the sections that describe Oregon.

QUESTIONS

1. In your geography, find the map of the Western States, and from it draw a map of the Oregon Country with the limits described in the first paragraph of this chapter.
2. Place on your map the mountains, rivers, and bays named in this chapter.
3. How does knowing the geography of a country help us better to understand its history?
4. Why did not the Chinese or Japanese reach the Pacific coast before the Europeans arrived? Why might they have been expected to arrive here first?
5. By what route did the Indians probably come to the Oregon Country?
6. How has the Columbia River made possible the settlement of Oregon?
7. Why was the Puget Sound region so densely inhabited by Indians in early times? Why do we find so many people in that region now?

8. Where are the largest cities of this region found today? Why are they located where they are?
9. How have the Cascade Mountains influenced the climate of western Oregon? How have they contributed to the wealth of the country?
10. What are some of the differences between eastern and western Oregon? Why did not eastern Oregon seem attractive to the early pioneers?
11. Name the three main geographical features of the Oregon Country. Show the importance of each.
12. Name the natural resources of Oregon that have drawn men to the country. Explain just what kind of people each resource would attract.

CHAPTER II

THE INDIANS OF OREGON

THE Indians were the first historic people to dwell in the Oregon Country. We do not know how long ago they first came into possession of the land. Neither can it be said with certainty whence or how they came, or to what race they originally belonged. It is believed, however, that they arrived in America from some part of Asia. They could have made the journey by following the coast of Siberia, crossing Bering Strait, and coming southward from Alaska along the western coast of the American continent. In historic times boats carried by winds and ocean currents have drifted eastward from Asia far across the Pacific Ocean to the coasts of California and Oregon. It may be that in this manner America was first peopled by the red men.

At the time of the coming of the white men, the American Indians, in various localities and in various tribes, represented every stage of human development and culture from the lowest savagery up through barbarism into the beginnings of civilization. The most advanced tribes to be found were the Incas of Peru, the Mayas of Central America, and the Aztecs of Mexico. Those tribes were emerging from barbarism into civilization. They alone of all American Indians had a written language, always a characteristic of civilized peoples.

Among the more advanced barbarians were the Iroquois of New York, who outstripped all other Indian tribes of North America in the science of government. Their strong confederacy — The Five Nations — played an important part in the early history of the European colonies along the northern Atlantic coast.

The Oregon Indians were true savages. The Indians of the Oregon country represented various stages of savage and barbarian culture, but it cannot be said that any of them possessed more than the rude beginnings of civilization. They had neither a written language nor a settled agriculture. It can hardly be said that they tilled the soil at all. Some tribes, which migrated with the seasons, were wanderers over the face of the earth. They ate wild fruits and berries, they even subsisted upon insects. They were always poor, always hungry and miserable. They had bows and arrows, and they knew how to fish and hunt, but beyond that stage they had not progressed. Those were truly savage men.

HEAD-DEFORMING CRADLE

For the most part the Oregon Indians were both savage and barbarian. When the first white men came the natives possessed only bows and arrows for weapons. They lived principally by fishing and by the chase.

Nevertheless they had learned to do many things which indicate a higher stage of culture. The Haidas of Queen Charlotte Islands and Alaska understood something about architecture and did very good wood carving. Many tribes possessed domestic animals, among which were the dog and the horse. They made rude tools and utensils, among them canoes and looms for weaving. Some made pottery, stone implements, and other utensils which helped to make living easier. Finally, they had begun to carve rude pictures and primitive inscriptions upon the rocks, on canoes, and on their houses and monuments. This indicates the first emergence from barbarism.

Location of the principal Indian tribes. For convenience in studying the Indian tribes of Oregon, the state is usually divided into four regions. In early times each region was dominated by several tribes which had some characteristics in common. These four regions are: (1) the valley of the Columbia River; (2) the Willamette Valley; (3) the coast country lying between the Coast Range and the sea; (4) eastern Oregon.

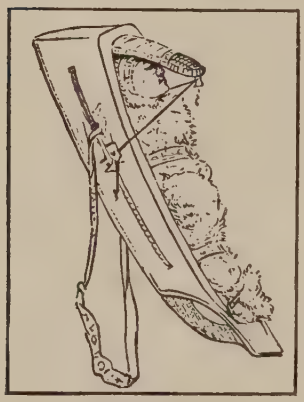
The Columbia River from the dalles to the present site of Astoria was claimed by the Chinooks and the Clatsops. The latter lived along the lower part of the stream. On the Washington side of the river were the Cowlitz Indians.

Along the Oregon coast, southward from the Columbia River, were the Tillamooks, the Nehalems, the Nestuccas, the Umpquas, and the Coquilles. The Tututni, together with some smaller groups, resided at the mouth of Rogue River.

The great inland valley of the Willamette River was

REGIONS ORIGINALLY
OCCUPIED BY
THE INDIANS
OF THE
OREGON COUNTRY
HAIDAS
NOOTKAS
FLATHEADS
NEZ PERCES
SPOKANES
YAKIMAS
NISQUALLIES
COWLITZ
KLIKITATS
CAYUSES
UMATILLAS
CHINOOKS
CLATSOPS
MOLALAS
TILLAMOOKS
CALAPOIAS
YONKALLAS
ALSEAS
BANNOCKS
TUTUTNI
KLAMATHS
UMPQUAS
MODOCS
SHOSHONES

filled with numerous tribes. The most important of those were the Calapooias, the Molalas, the Santiams, and the Lakmiuts, all of whom dwelt along the rivers of those names. The Yamells, or Yamhills, and the Tualati, or Tualatins, also lived in the Willamette Valley. After the arrival of the white settlers the most powerful tribes claimed eastern Oregon, and, as we shall see, waged bloody wars against the encroachments of the newcomers. The tribes that dwelt there included the Cayuses, Nez Percés, Klamaths, Modocs, and Yakimas, who lived along the Columbia River above the dalles and southward to the lake region of central Oregon. Some Shoshone tribes lived south of the Blue Mountains in what are now Harney and Malheur counties.



A CHINOOK CRADLE

The Indians gradually disappear. The explorers, Lewis and Clark, who in 1805 observed the numerous Indian villages along the Columbia River, estimated the number of the Chinooks at sixteen thousand. While wintering near the site of the present town of Seaside they visited eight villages of the Tillamooks and reported twenty-two hundred tribesmen. Between 1820 and 1850 two or three disastrous epidemics appeared among the Oregon Indians. The result of those was a great reduction in the number of Indians, and, in some cases, the destruction of whole villages and entire tribes. Aside

from measles and smallpox, we do not know what diseases thus destroyed those peoples. Dr. John McLoughlin, an employee of the Hudson's Bay Company, stated that eighty per cent of the natives died during the epidemics. In 1835, Samuel Parker, who was well acquainted among the Indian tribes of the entire region, reported only two thousand Chinooks in the section where Lewis and Clark had seen eight times that number. Five years later only thirteen hundred Chinooks were alive; they were a sickly and vanishing remnant of a once powerful people. By 1854 only three hundred fifty remained. Those few were then removed to the reservations at Yakima and Warm Springs, where, among the mixed tribesmen of today, probably not one full-blooded Chinook remains. Captain Charles Wilkes, who studied the tribes of Oregon in 1841, found only four hundred Tillamooks; Governor Joseph Lane could count only two hundred in 1849. The remnants of that savage people which so ferociously assailed Captain Robert Gray in 1788, but among whom Lewis and Clark lived in harmony, are now extinct. Nought of them remains but the names they gave to the geography of Oregon.

Alexander Ross, a representative of John Jacob Astor's Pacific Fur Company, observed the Indians about the mouth of the Columbia River in 1811. At that time he counted ten tribes and two thousand warriors.

The Willamette Valley Indians. At one time the Willamette Valley also held a large Indian population. Lewis and Clark, who in 1806 went up the Willamette River for a few miles, heard from the Indians who lived in the territory about the falls of the Willamette River,

that the tribe of the Calapooias occupied forty villages. In the valley as a whole, Samuel Parker in 1841 saw seventeen tribes or villages with a population of about eighty-eight hundred. By the Treaties of Dayton of 1855, all the tribes in the Willamette Valley agreed to sell their hunting grounds to the settlers and go upon reservations. Two years later, that being the time when they were removed, they numbered six hundred sixty-six, divided into many small bands. By the year 1880 the Calapooias at the Siletz and Grande Ronde reservations numbered only three hundred fifty-one persons; ten years later those had dwindled to one hundred sixty-four. In 1905 only one hundred thirty remained. In 1909 only five Santiams were alive, and but one hundred three Oregon Shoshones.

Disappearance of the other tribes. The Shastas and other Rogue River tribes, which totaled about two thousand at the time they were sent to the Siletz and Grande Ronde reservations, have likewise perished. The Nestuccas and the Nehalems are extinct—cut down by the ravages of war, by the white man's diseases, and by dissipation. To the last aged and lonely man, the Molalas have disappeared. The freedom-loving Cayuse, who knew how to fight and die, but not how to live with the white man as a master, has vanished from his grassy plains, which are today filled with populous cities. Iron trains now thunder among the hills, where, not long ago, the red man pitched his tepee in the woods.

Government of the Indian tribes. The Indian tribes of our state had numerous primitive political, social, and religious institutions. The prevailing form

of government was the tribal village. It had neither mayor, aldermen, nor court. The village chief, or headman, was sometimes a hereditary ruler, and sometimes he was appointed or elected by his fellows. If the son of the chief were unfit to rule, he was deposed; authority was then given to one who was esteemed worthy in the eyes of the community.

Villages were organized for war, and war was a regular institution among all the tribes. The authority of the chief, local only in time of peace, was considerably increased when a village or a group of villages went to war with another tribe or with the whites.

In all his pageants, war and the trappings of war occupied the center of the Indian's interest. The chief who went on a visit to a neighboring village, or who received a passing visitor, white or red, did so in the full regalia of war, attended by all his men-at-arms. So completely did war occupy the time and attention of some tribes that even villages of the same tribe frequently assailed one another. One village warred upon another of the same tribe without violation of national unity or tribal sentiment. This was true especially among the Tututni.

An Indian family: Maquina's household. Among our primitive European ancestors, local government was organized about the clan, which included a group of families of blood relationship, in addition to which there were also usually some adopted members. Nothing of the kind was ever observed among the Indians of this region. Even when a considerable number of them lived under one roof, as in Chief Maquina's household at

Nootka Sound, members of the "King's" household ranked in the order of precedence, or importance, of the men of the tribe, and not according to blood relationship. So, at least, we are told by John Jewitt, an early traveler who spent three years in captivity there.

Maquina's household was perhaps the most pretentious to be found along the northwestern coast of America. On all important occasions Maquina wore a gorgeous robe of sea-otter fur worth many thousands of dollars.

From an Old Print

CHIEF MAQUINA

He was a magnificent barbarian. John Jewitt, a member of the crew of the ship *Boston,* who was in this region in 1803, tells us that Maquina stood six feet in height, was straight, and of good features. He had a Roman nose. He habitually smeared his body with red paint, and he painted his eyebrows in two broad black stripes shaped like the new moon. His long black hair, shiny with oil, was fastened on top of his head like a bunch of spinach. Over it, like powdered sugar on a plate of berries, Maquina strewed white down from the breasts of wildfowl.

Between the kingly Maquina, lording it over the fur traders at Nootka Sound, accepting the homage of neighboring tribes from the Strait of Juan de Fuca to Queen Charlotte Islands, or receiving official visits from Vancouver and Martinez, emissaries of imperial Britain and

decadent Spain — between "King" Maquina and the lowly Shoshone who burrowed for roots on Malheur Hills, there was a mighty gulf. The cause of this difference between the social and cultural standing of the two types is not difficult to understand. Maquina and his tribesmen possessed that which the white man coveted, the precious skins of the sea otter. From that article of commerce the natives of Vancouver Island grew rich. The Shoshones, on the other hand, lived in a land of locusts and sagebrush plains, which, to this day, the combined energy and thrift of the European have scarcely sufficed to reclaim.

The importance of a food supply. The only property in land recognized by the Indians of this region was the right of personal use and occupancy. Altogether there was little opportunity for the Indian to learn much. The tribes could make little advance toward civilization on account of the seasonal migrations. Always in search of a food supply, the village was frequently moved. The tribes along the coast, however, and some others, which depended upon the salmon for food, had relatively more permanent homes.

The evil consequences of war. War, too, retarded the cultural progress of the Indian tribes because war is always disturbing and destructive. It is recorded by those who know that the tribal wars among the Indians of the Oregon Country were very tame affairs in which little blood was shed. It may be that the effects of such conflicts have been exaggerated in narratives composed by writers of more recent times.

Woman's place in Indian life. Woman had little or no part in the control of Indian affairs. Both before and after marriage she was a drudge, often little better than a slave. All labor in the home fell upon her, since the men were often away, hunting, fishing, or on the warpath. The women attended to the preparation of skins for clothing, made mats and other utensils, and supervised the gathering of food. When the tribe was on the march the women had the care of the camp. Often they accompanied the men to war, and instances are known in which they even took part in battle.

Among the Shoshones of eastern Oregon, Indian husbands were the absolute proprietors not only of their wives but of their daughters as well. They disposed of their women by barter or otherwise. It is said that some mothers even killed female infants to save the offspring from later miseries like those which they themselves suffered.

Marriage customs of the Indians. The Calapooias practiced wife purchase. Among them, however, women were not differently treated on that account. At that, the practice of wife purchase does not mark the Calapooias as particularly low in the scale of human progress, for some modern nations, which possess the institutions of civilization, practice wife purchase even today. Indeed it is rather common in many Asiatic countries.

A more deplorable custom which seriously affected the position of women among the Indian tribes was that observed among the Tututni of southern Oregon. This was the practice of polygyny, or the marriage of several women to one man. While this custom is in itself abhor-

rent to us, its worst feature was the Tututni practice of burying alive a man's wives in the grave with the deceased at the time of his death. Fortunately, however, polygyny was not practiced to any great extent even among the Indians of this region.

Courtesy of American Museum of Natural History

IMAGES CARVED BY INDIANS OF THE NORTHWEST COAST

The work of Indian women. Indian art found its expression largely in the work of women. Klamath and Modoc women were noted basket weavers and their wares often found their way to the shores of the distant Pacific. On the Northwest Coast the women of some tribes made robes and blankets out of dog's hair.

The Haida Indians, of Queen Charlotte Islands, traced their descent back to two women. Those were honored

as the founders of the two clans which formed the tribe, the Eagle Clan and the Raven Clan. Theoretically each clan was descended from one woman. Haida Indians were noted wood carvers and painters, and they were the most efficient canoe and house builders on the Northwest Coast. Their canoes, which were very large, were sometimes hollowed out of single logs of cedar. The houses were constructed of large cedar beams and planks, which in ancient times were worked out with stone axes and hatchets.

The virtues of Indian women. The story of Sacajawea, the Bird Woman mentioned by Lewis and Clark, although well known, is told elsewhere in this history. (Page 87.) Indian women were always patient. The melancholy John Jewitt, in captivity at Nootka Sound and suffering from serious wounds, testifies to their ministrations, which were so kind that presently he fell in love with one of the dark-skinned maidens and took her as his wife. The women of Nootka Sound were always modest. They refused to drink the fire water stolen from the ill-fated *Boston*, and whenever the men began beastly orgies they retired shamefaced and terror-stricken from the scene.

Women took part in many tribal ceremonies, never appearing to better advantage than when singing the quaint and soft melodies that seemed to belie the savage scene. Alexander Ross, in 1811, reported that the Chinook women were fond of singing while at work. William Sturgis, who was on the Northwest Coast from 1788 to 1830, observed that the Indian women sang with great sweetness and pathos. He considered the Indians

as considerate and affectionate in their family life as are people elsewhere. Indian children were always treated with indulgence, seldom punished, and never struck. Sturgis thought that the Indian women, for all their drudgery, controlled domestic affairs reasonably well. Despite the pleasant picture, Sturgis realized that the Indians were not a joyful race, and that, except for

From an Old Print

A CHINOOK INDIAN LODGE IN 1841

singing and dancing in common, and the gambling of the men, they had few amusements. Such sports have always been the pastimes of primitive peoples.

Slavery among the Indians. Slavery was thoroughly interwoven with the social system of the coast Indians, and, to a lesser extent, with that of the Indian dwellers in the Willamette Valley. Those peoples, who lived upon salmon and thus had a never-failing food

supply, possessed fixed homes. The tribes in eastern Oregon and along the upper Columbia River, on the contrary, because of their nomadic habits and roving dispositions, did not own slaves. Some eastern tribes, like the Klamaths and Modocs, were not, however, averse to enriching themselves by selling slaves to the Chinooks and the other coast tribes. W. F. Tolmie, who was with the Hudson's Bay Company, observed the prevalence of slaveholding and the traffic in slaves throughout the region from south to north. There was, however, one notable exception. The Cowlitz tribes, on the north bank of the Columbia River, procured their slaves from the tribes about Puget Sound. The Klamaths and Modocs secured theirs by raiding the villages of the Pitt River Indians. Slavery existed long before the settlements of the white men were made. Alexander Ross saw a considerable traffic in slaves about the mouth of the Columbia River in 1811, and Jewitt, at Nootka Sound, saw nearly fifty male and female slaves in Maquina's household at one time. The Klamath word for slave was *lugsh,* which means "to carry a load." This indicates that among those Indians slaves were used for carrying burdens and for other menial tasks. The Indians treated their slaves well because they were valuable.

The food of the Indians. What did the Indians eat? The answer to this question indicates, better than can anything else, the state of their primitive culture. They did not practice agriculture nor did they possess either flocks or herds. And it is just the extent of these activities which mark the degree of a people's cultural development.

The tribes of the four geographical regions had some articles of food in common. All made use of the wild fruits, berries, and edible roots of their respective localities. The staple article of diet along the coast and on the Columbia River, far up toward its headwaters, was the salmon, a never-failing source of food. The Indians of the Willamette Valley obtained no salmon because the falls, at the present site of Oregon City, prevented the fish from ascending that stream and its tributaries. As compensation for the lack of salmon, however, the Indians of that region had an abundance of big game — deer, elk, and bears — and innumerable wildfowl — ducks, geese, and swans — which made that valley a hunter's paradise even for a long time after the coming of the white men. The Indians snared or shot wildfowl as they shot or snared deer and elk. Sometimes the larger animals were caught by means of covered pits.

The valley tribes also lived upon freshwater fish, acorns, seeds, roots, and fruits. The latter included crab apples, wild cherries, elderberries, huckleberries, salal, several species of wild raspberries, luscious blackberries, and strawberries. Grapes and wild plums, found in southern Oregon, furnished food to the tribes that dwelt in that region.

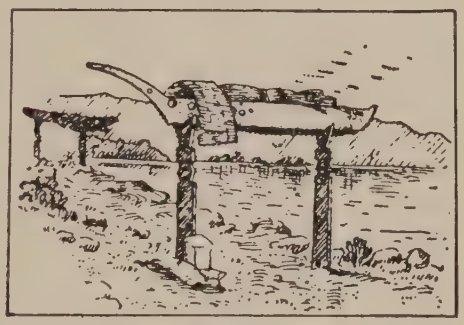
It has been said that the Shoshonees had a rude agriculture. The tribes of southeastern Oregon lived in a land without big game, but they did have rabbits and other small game such as wild ducks and wild geese. A kind of flour, called *wocus* or *wokas,* made from the seeds of the great water lily found on the Klamath River marshes, was used by those tribes.

The wandering tribes of eastern Oregon and the upper Columbia River region made little progress in hunting until the introduction of horses among them. This occurred some time before Lewis and Clark passed through the region. By means of their horses they were able to go afar in search of game. Samuel Parker, who was among the Cayuses in 1835, observed their use of cranberries as food.

How the Indians cooked. A kind of bulb, called *camas,* much sought by various tribes, was cooked by roasting in pits. The *wapato,* a tuber resembling the potato, was found in the ponds and sloughs of western Oregon and along the Columbia River. Sunflower roots were also eaten, and a kind of flour was made from the underground stems of the common brake or fern. Meat was usually roasted on sticks held over the fire. Since the Indians had no metal cooking utensils, foods were boiled by placing them in water-tight wooden containers. The water was boiled and the food prepared by dropping heated stones into the vessels. As the stones cooled they were taken out and replaced by other hot ones. It should be remembered that, for the most part, the Indians ate their food uncooked.

The education of Indian children. Indian boys and girls did not go to schools such as we have today. Nevertheless their education, such as it was, was well taken care of. It was unnecessary for them to learn to read or write; the spoken language only was used. Instruction of a certain kind was necessary, and this was learned in the family, or about the camp fire, or at tribal ceremonies. Such learning consisted of tribal lore, or *folklore,*

as we term it. Chiefs, prophets, soothsayers, story-tellers, magicians, and medicine men transmitted the traditions and legends of the people from generation to generation by word of mouth. The Oregon Indians, like nearly all other primitive peoples, had secret rites into which the men of the tribes, and sometimes the women, too, were initiated under certain circumstances. How to hunt, to fish, to follow the deer and elk, how to make canoes and arrows, how to weave mats and baskets—those were the things which the boys and girls had to learn in those days long ago. Only by learning them were they enabled to live, to survive, amid hostile and unfavorable surroundings.



CHINOOK BURIAL CANOE

Indian religious and burial ceremonies. The religion of the Indians of prehistoric Oregon was as primitive as their mode of living and their art. To a great extent their religion was expressed in their art. The totems of the far Northwest and of Alaska, as well as the rude stone carvings of strange birds and other creatures which are found along the Columbia River, were attempts to express the Indian's hopes, fears, and beliefs.

He also expressed his beliefs in the ceremony of burial. When an Indian died his relatives spoke in whispers. The deceased was wrapped in his blanket, and his per-

sonal ornaments and valuables were laid with him in the place of interment, which was invariably a secluded spot near a river, on an elevated site, or in a tree. The Chinooks buried many of their dead in canoes. Alexander Ross saw more than a hundred such burial canoes at one burial place of the Chinook tribe.

The Calapooias buried in graves similar to those we use. This people also raised many burial mounds in the Willamette Valley. During the first few days after burial the relatives went to the grave at sunrise and at sunset to sing songs of mourning and praise. The Haidas believed in reincarnation, that is, that the spirits of the departed come back in the bodies of other people or in the bodies of animals. It was the ambition of every Chinook to acquire a guardian spirit which should accompany him everywhere and warn him of approaching danger.

Various tribes worshipped the coyote as the embodiment of wisdom and cunning. The Klamaths believed that the world was created by Kemush. The legend of the Thunder Bird may be traceable to the California condor, a gigantic vulture which may have ranged farther north in prehistoric times, but which is now nearly extinct, as it is found only seldom even in the high sierras. The Indians believed that the Thunder Bird was the messenger of the gods, of which there were many. They believed there were spirits or gods in everything — the bear, the eagle, the coyote, the sun, the moon, and the stars. They believed that every lake and every stream was haunted — some by happy or good spirits, others by unhappy or bad spirits. Those latter were often

heard wailing in the night. If they caught an Indian they took his soul away. He then died unless the charmers or medicine men could get it to return.

The Indians lose the Oregon Country. The red man once lived undisturbed in Oregon; his villages filled every valley. Now, however, his thousands of warriors and hunters, his dark-eyed maidens and careless children are no more. Why did he lose this beautiful and generous land? Many explanations might be given. Epidemics, war, whisky, dissipation, and tuberculosis wasted his strength and his numbers. Settlers eagerly seeking his land came in ever-increasing trains. Against his will reservations enclosed him. On those he lived and died, always expressing a strong desire to return to his native land, always filled with superstitious awe at having his body buried in a foreign soil. Many who failed in a desperate attempt to regain their former freedom died from a depression of spirit. Today only a remnant remains. These are the wards of the Nation, carefully watched over, their wants provided for. Those of the new generation, born on the reservations, have become reconciled to the new plan of life. If they can do what their ancestors could not achieve, they may survive. For, after all is said, the Indian vanished because he could not learn the ways of the white man. He could not survive in competition with the dominant race.

ADDITIONAL READINGS

There is no adequate treatment of the history of the Indian tribes of the Oregon Country. Material used for this chapter was taken largely from *Bulletins* of the United States Bureau of Ethnology and other official sources.

BALCH, F. H. *The Bridge of the Gods.* (Fiction.)
CAREY, C. H. *History of Oregon.* Chap. 3.
COOPER, J. C. *The Yamhills.* (Fiction.)
JUDSON, KATHERINE B. *Early Days in Old Oregon,* pp. 224-236.
——— *Myths and Legends of the Pacific Northwest.*
SCHAFER, JOSEPH. *History of the Pacific Northwest,* pp. 119-122.

QUESTIONS

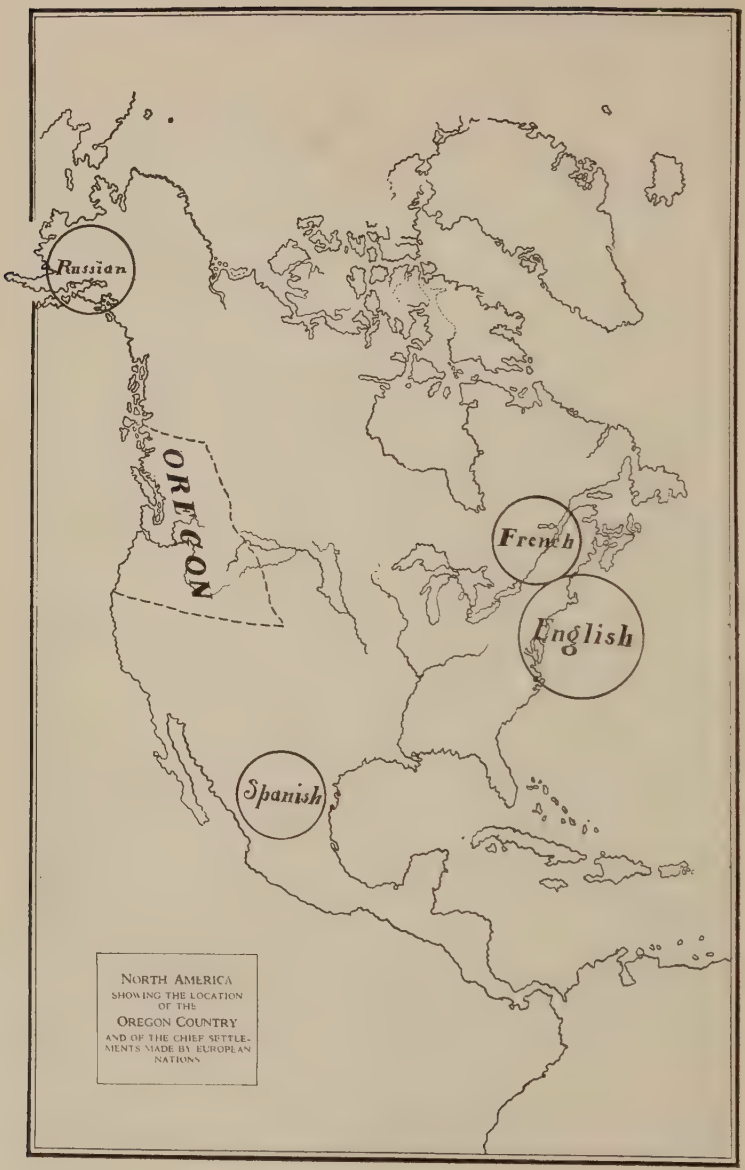
1. In what way was America probably peopled?
2. Locate the former homes of the principal tribes of Oregon Indians. What tribe occupied the locality in which you now live?
3. Does your locality contain any remains of the Indian occupation? Of what do such remains consist?
4. What names of places in your vicinity are of Indian origin?
5. Name and locate the Indian reservations of Oregon.
6. How many Indians now occupy the reservations of Oregon?
7. Write a description of "King" Maquina.
8. What were the chief pastimes of the Indians?
9. What tribes held the most desirable regions? Why were these regions the most desirable from the Indians' point of view?
10. Mention some religious beliefs of the Oregon Indians.
11. What were the causes of the early hostility of the Indians to the whites?
12. Why was the Indian population along the Columbia River more dense than elsewhere?
13. What caused the disappearance of the Indian tribes?

CHAPTER III

THE DISCOVERY OF THE NORTHWEST COAST

THE Oregon Country was the last great land of mystery in North America. For many years it did not have even a name, but was merely called the Northwest Coast. Anyone who looks at a map carefully will see that Oregon was far away from the settlements made by the Europeans who first came to either North America or South America. Because it was an unknown land men believed and hoped that it might be hiding certain things which they had vainly sought to find elsewhere. Most important of all those was a strait that should connect the Atlantic and Pacific oceans.

A notion held by Columbus. Christopher Columbus did a brave thing when he crossed a strange ocean with the expectation of discovering new lands and a new route to the Indies. He did not, however, discover very much of the continent of America. Even the small portion of South America which he explored made him believe that the earth is, after all, not round like a ball, but rather, shaped like a pear. Columbus was quite sure that Haiti, Cuba, and the other islands which he found lay off the coast of Asia. Too, he believed that a way to the rich kingdoms of the East could be found by passing through those islands and sailing out upon a broad eastern sea.



NORTH AMERICA
SHOWING THE LOCATION
OF THE
OREGON COUNTRY
AND OF THE CHIEF SETTLE-
MENTS MADE BY EUROPEAN
NATIONS

The discovery made by Balboa. The first explorers who followed Columbus also believed that the mainland, which they always found in front of them, was a large island or a group of islands. This belief is shown by the way the very old maps are made.

One of those early explorers was a Spaniard named Vasco de Balboa. Hidden in a barrel, he managed to make his way out of the Spanish settlement in Cuba in order to elude some men to whom he owed money. We always remember Balboa as the man who marched through the forests and marshes of the Isthmus of Panama and so discovered the Pacific Ocean. But he discovered something else at the same time. He learned that the distance between the two oceans at the point where he crossed the continent is very short indeed.

Balboa's discovery led many people to suppose that North America might be only a long narrow strip of land. They believed that if such were the case, the land would be very likely to have a break in it somewhere, and they were confident that such an opening would be the long-sought strait connecting the Atlantic Ocean with the great eastern sea. Of course no one could expect to find a strait through a continent three thousand miles wide, such as we today know America to be, but in those early times the wrong conclusions drawn from Balboa's discovery raised men's hopes high indeed.

Stories told by early seamen. Sailors have always liked to tell wondrous tales — "to spin yarns," as we say. The superstitions about the dangers of the Atlantic Ocean, which Columbus proved to be untrue, were such stories. It is not astonishing that when explorers were

hunting for something which did not exist, there were men who claimed not only to have seen the straits in question, but even to have sailed through them. Perhaps the most important of those early tale-bearing sailors was a Greek pilot whom the Spaniards called Juan de Fuca.

Juan de Fuca's story. Juan de Fuca wrote marvelous letters to some Englishmen from whom he wanted to obtain money. He said he had been a pilot on Spanish ships in the West Indies and along the Pacific coast. That much was probably true. He also said that, while on the California coast, an English sea raider had robbed him of a great treasure in gold. It is likely that such was by no means the case. Most important of all, however, Juan de Fuca said that after the robbery occurred he got command of a Spanish ship and found a strait on the Northwest Coast through which he sailed into the North Atlantic and so back home again. He said, too, that the newly discovered country was rich in fruits, gold, and precious jewels. He claimed that the Spaniards had never paid him for his work, so he agreed to sell his information to the Queen of England.

Nothing came of Juan de Fuca's scheme, and it is hard to tell what truth may have been in it. Almost two hundred years later, however, an Englishman discovered a beautiful strait which connects the Pacific Ocean with Puget Sound. He named it after the old Greek sailor, because it was not far from the parallel of latitude where Juan de Fuca said he had once been. Perhaps Juan de Fuca had seen this strait; possibly the Indians had merely told him about it; certainly he did not sail through North America on any such waters.

Spain tries to hold the Pacific Ocean. Soldiers of the Spanish king had conquered wealthy Indian tribes in Mexico and South America. There were stories told and believed about other countries and cities, lying both northward and westward, where riches were so plentiful that pearls lay in the streets and frying pans were made of gold. At once the Spaniards became fearful that other nations might discover those unvisited cities. They also feared that their enemies might attack the lands which Spain already held. Consequently the Spanish king claimed that not only the land but also the ocean belonged to him, and he declared that the ships of other nations should not sail upon it.

The voyage of Ferrelo. For the reason explained, the Spaniards were much afraid that the English, or French, or someone else would first discover the water passage to the Indies, which everyone believed to exist. Although the strait might lie too far northward to be of any real use to Spain, the Spaniards wanted to discover it in order to send soldiers there and so build forts to keep people of other nations away.

In 1542, thirty years after Balboa had waded into the Pacific Ocean and declared that it belonged to the King of Spain, the governor of Mexico, which was then a Spanish province, sent out Bartholomew Ferrelo to see what he could discover. Ferrelo sailed northward, probably as far as the present southern boundary of Oregon, but he did not land. A cape along this coast has since been named after him.

An Englishman raids the Pacific coast. The Spaniards had good reason to fear what might happen if ever

an enemy sailed into the Pacific Ocean. For nearly a century they had been quite undisturbed in their North American possessions; then something happened that both frightened and enraged them. This was Francis Drake's raid on the Pacific coast.

Francis Drake was a young Englishman, who, when hardly more than a boy, was in command of a ship that, taking refuge from a storm, sailed into the harbor of Vera Cruz, Mexico. There he and his men were treacherously attacked and robbed of their provisions and weapons. Most of the crew were killed, and Drake himself barely escaped with his life. Finally he reached England, penniless and starving.

From an Old Print

SIR FRANCIS DRAKE

Nine years later, in a well-armed ship named *The Golden Hind,* Drake sailed around Cape Horn and into the Pacific Ocean. He ruled his crew with a firm hand, cheered them with his hearty laughter, and promised them rich treasure. Their success is almost beyond belief. They robbed a Spanish pack train of its silver, they seized a Spanish treasure ship, and they captured a city on the Mexican coast.

Drake sails northward to Oregon. Drake did not dare return southward because the Spanish forces were on his trail like a swarm of angry wasps. He hoped

to find a way either around North America or through it. By June, 1579, he had sailed as far north as the Oregon coast, but he made no landing. As he had seen nothing that looked like a strait, he turned about and sailed back to California. There he and his crew landed and were well received by the Indians. One of the chiefs gave Drake a pipe to smoke, and put a feather hat on his head. Before the Englishmen left, Drake named the

From an Old Print

THE GOLDEN HIND

land New Albion and claimed it for England as far northward as it extended. To escape the Spaniards he now steered westward, sailed around the world, and so reached England safely. Although Drake never again visited Oregon, the land where he sought refuge is now the home of English-speaking people.

Spanish ships from the Philippines. In those days a Spanish merchant ship sailed once each year from Manila, in the Philippine Islands, at that time a Spanish

possession, to the western coast of Mexico. This was the only trade which the Spanish king allowed between the two places. The Manila galleon, as this ship was called, was usually loaded with silks and other Asiatic goods. Since it was impossible to sail directly to Mexico, because the winds did not blow in that direction, by turning northeastward the ship could follow the Japan Current across the Pacific. When the galleon reached the American continent it then sailed southward along the coast to Mexico. The first trading voyage of such a Manila galleon was made in 1566.

The Manila galleons were picturesque craft — "huge, round-stemmed, clumsy vessels, with bulwarks three or four feet thick, and built at stem and stern like a castle. Such a boat was both a merchant ship and a war vessel, though the armaments would not now seem very terrifying; ordinarily there were three small cannon, four catapults to hurl stones with, and some fifty muskets."

Sometimes the winds carried those Spanish ships as far northward as the mouth of the Columbia River. The sailors must often have seen the Oregon coast from Coos Bay southward, but it is not certainly known whether or not the galleons ever stopped here. They may, however, have done so for several reasons. The voyage across the Pacific was very long and dangerous. Sometimes crew and passengers did not see land for five weary months, and on such occasions both food and water became very scarce before the end of the voyage. Storms were frequent and the galleons were often injured by them; several were lost entirely. One or two were captured by pirates.

It may be that in the two hundred fifty years during which they sailed, some of the Manila galleons stopped on the Oregon coast long enough to refill their water casks or to cut timber for repairs. Not many years ago a large tree was cut down near Cape Perpetua. Ax-marks found in the wood, which the tree had grown

From an Old Print

A MANILA GALLEON

around and covered up, showed that they must have been there a great many years. Might they not have been made by one of the crew from a Manila galleon?

The Indians, too, told stories of ships that were wrecked along the Oregon coast. At more than one place on the Oregon beaches, lumps of beeswax, such as the Spaniards used for making church candles, have been found. All these discoveries indicate that the

Northwest Coast was not forgotten by the Spaniards, and that they found it both useful and dangerous. Although there were no settlements for hundreds of miles, yet almost every year the Indians must have been reminded of the white men whenever they saw Spanish ships sailing along the coast.

The Spaniards advance northward. The Spanish governor of Mexico feared that Drake had found the strait which led through North America, and that the dauntless Englishman had either come or gone, or both, by way of it. Except for the Manila galleons, however, no Spanish vessels came in sight of the Oregon coast for many years. In 1602 another Spanish exploration of the Pacific coast north of Mexico was made. The vessel, of which Sebastian Viscaino was captain, did not go much farther north than the present southern boundary of Oregon. More than a hundred sixty years then passed before the Spaniards again exhibited any interest in the northern stretches of coast. At that time military posts and missions were established along the California coast, the most northerly ones being located about San Francisco Bay. This brought the white man much nearer to Oregon.

A new interest in the Northwest Coast. When the Spaniards again decided that the Northwest Coast might be worth exploring, most of North America was in the possession of other nations. The English settlements had increased from the single little village at Jamestown, to twenty prosperous colonies; the Russians were rapidly occupying the coast of Alaska. The rivalry among the different European nations finally brought

about a thorough exploration of the Northwest Coast. Otherwise Oregon would doubtless have been left to the wild animals and the Indians for many more years.

Important Spanish voyages: Juan Perez. Seemingly the Spaniards only wanted to establish settlements as a protection against possible invaders. They usually delayed founding such settlements so long as they could, and it was not until 1774, the year of the First Continental Congress at Philadelphia, that a Spanish expedition of any importance set out. It was commanded by Juan Perez. The vessel cruised the entire length of the Oregon coast, and stayed in sight of land most of the time. Though Perez stopped for a while in one of the harbors of Vancouver Island, he could do no more, for his crew was sick and his vessel was in bad condition.

The Spaniards take the Northwest Coast. Everyone knows that 1775 is a date in American history to be remembered because the Revolutionary War began at Lexington during that year. It likewise has a place in Oregon history, for in the same year took place the most important voyage which the Spaniards had yet made.

On the Oregon coast there is a sharp cape which is today called Heceta Head. It is named after Bruno Heceta, who had charge of that expedition. He landed on the mainland near the Strait of Juan de Fuca and took possession of the country in the name of Spain. This is the first historical record of white men's setting foot on the Northwest Coast.

One of Heceta's ships went northward as far as southern Alaska. Then the crew fell ill with scurvy, a disease caused by eating too much salt meat and not enough

fresh vegetables. At last the men could hardly hoist the sails or work about the ship.

This bad fortune caused Heceta to miss what would have been a really great discovery. On the way southward he came to a bay where the strong eddies and the appearance of the water caused him to believe that he was outside the mouth of a large river. He thought rightly, for the Columbia River flows into the ocean at that place. Heceta, however, with his sick crew, had to sail on homeward to Mexico as fast as possible.

From an Old Print

CAPTAIN JAMES COOK

The English return to the Northwest Coast. The Spaniards had been just in time. In 1776, the year of the Declaration of Independence, the British government sent Captain James Cook to see if he could find the strait that Drake had looked for. A reward of a hundred thousand dollars was offered for the discovery of it. One member of Captain Cook's expedition, a young corporal of marines, was an American named John Ledyard.

Cook explores the Oregon coast. It was two years before Captain Cook and his companions saw the Pacific coast. On the night when they first sighted land a heavy storm arose, so they named the headland Cape Foulweather. A fine lighthouse now stands on the cape to warn vessels that may be caught in other such storms.

With the coming of good weather, Captain Cook and his men continued up the coast, giving names to various other places. They sailed past the mouth of the Columbia River and past the entrance to the Strait of Juan de Fuca without entering either of them. Finally they landed at a good harbor in Vancouver Island.

Captain Cook at Nootka Sound. There a party of nineteen natives, in one small and two large canoes, came out to meet them. The Indians chanted a song of welcome. Soon other canoes joined the first. Finally there were more than thirty of them, each filled with warriors, women, and children. Within a week at least two thousand Indians had come to see the white strangers.

Captain Cook learned that the name of the harbor was Nootka; it bears that name today — Nootka Sound. Although the natives were great thieves, on this occasion they behaved toward the explorers in a friendly manner. They were willing to do almost anything for a bit of metal, particularly iron, and they offered furs in trade for a supply of it. At one time they gave sixty-nine sea-otter skins, worth almost seven thousand dollars, for a handful of nails. When Captain Cook left Nootka Sound the Indian chief gave him a beautiful otter-skin coat; Cook, in turn, gave the chief a fine sword.

Cook's expedition sails to China. Captain Cook searched diligently for a strait, but of course he found none. At last he sailed for China. He went first to the Hawaiian Islands for food and water; there, in a quarrel with the natives, he was killed. His two ships then sailed on to China and in that country the crews learned the value of the furs which they had obtained from the North

American Indians for a few worthless bits of old iron. So soon as the men learned that, all wanted to give up exploring and to return to the Northwest Coast to make their fortunes buying furs. The officers, however, would not consent. When at last they returned to England the news of the fur region spread quickly. Then traders,

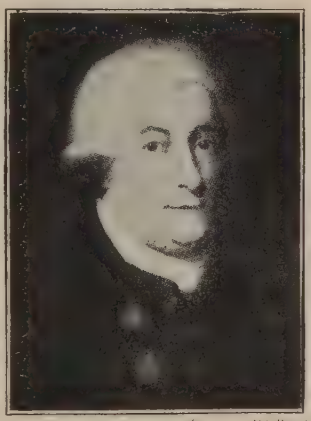
From an Old Print

THE INDIAN SETTLEMENT ON NOOTKA SOUND

instead of explorers, began to fit out ships for the Northwest Coast where the fortunes were to be found.

The last of the explorers. Not until three centuries after the discovery of America was it finally proved that a waterway across North America does not exist. About ten years after Cook's expedition, George Vancouver, who had been with Captain Cook, was sent by the British government to make an accurate survey of the Northwest Coast.

As Vancouver did not believe there was such a strait, he joyfully accepted the task of proving that he was right. He made such an accurate examination of the Pacific coastline that his maps may still be used. Puget Sound was named for Peter Puget, one of his lieutenants. Many other places in Oregon, Washington, and British Columbia bear names which George Vancouver, the fearless English explorer, gave to them.



From an Old Print

GEORGE VANCOUVER

Vancouver proved that he was right and that the belief in a strait was false. He was unlucky, however, in that he failed to make two very important discoveries. Although he explored Puget Sound, an English fur trader had discovered the Strait of Juan de Fuca before Vancouver arrived. And Vancouver passed by the mouth of the Columbia River only a few days before an American fur trader sailed into it and up the river, inland.

ADDITIONAL READINGS

CAREY, C. H. *History of Oregon,* pp. 68-96.
JUDSON, K. B. *Early Days in Old Oregon,* pp. 5-12.
LAUT, A. C. *Vikings of the Pacific.* (Drake in California) pp. 133-171; (Captain Cook in America) pp. 172-209; (Vancouver: Last of the Explorers) pp. 263-392.
SCHAFER, J. *History of the Pacific Northwest,* pp. 1-14.
SKINNER, CONSTANCE L. *Adventurers of Oregon,* pp. 1-12.

QUESTIONS

1. Why was Oregon a land of mystery?
2. Make a list of the explorers who were looking for a strait through the American continent. From what countries did they come?
3. What was *The Golden Hind?*
4. Who is the most interesting of the explorers that visited the Northwest Coast?
5. Why did commerce spring up between Mexico and Asia?
6. How did the freighters make the voyage across the Pacific in early days?
7. What might have happened if Heceta had really discovered the Columbia River?
8. In what part of Oregon were the early explorers most interested?
9. Describe Captain Cook's voyage.
10. How did George Vancouver help in the exploration of the Oregon coast?

MAP WORK

1. Locate five places in the Oregon Country that were named by or for Spanish and English explorers.
2. Place the above on a blackboard map. Indicate Nootka Sound and the Strait of Juan de Fuca, but do not show the Columbia River.

CHAPTER IV

THE PACIFIC FUR TRADE

THE Russians were not interested in America until nearly two hundred fifty years after Columbus discovered the continent. Then the Russian emperor concluded that he would like to know something about the land which Spaniards, French, and English were dividing among themselves. He chose Vitus Bering, a Dane, to command an expedition which should carefully investigate that part of America lying nearest to Asia.

In his boyhood Bering had been a sailor; later he became a soldier. He was the first explorer who sailed eastward to find America. To the Russians that seemed the easiest way, because they could go by land across Siberia and launch their boats directly on the Pacific Ocean.

Bering made two voyages. On the second he and his crew were shipwrecked on a storm-beaten island off the Alaskan coast. There, worn out with sickness and suffering, Bering died. A part of the crew survived because they managed to feed and clothe themselves with the animals they killed. At last they returned to Asia in a leaky little boat which they had built. There they too learned that the Chinese would buy their furs for astonishing prices. At once the Russians hastened to gather furs in America and so become wealthy. Forts were built in Alaska and Russian hunters slowly advanced south-

ward. In this way they became neighbors to the dwellers in the Oregon Country.

Hunting the sea otter. The sea otter was the animal chiefly sought by hunters who ranged the coast from Alaska to California. The favorite home of that animal is the rocky coast overgrown with seaweed and kelp.

MALE AND FEMALE FUR SEAL

There it flourishes. When full-grown the sea otter measures from four to six feet in length. Its soft fur, which is usually black as ebony, has long been highly prized. Even in those early days a single skin sometimes sold for as much as a hundred fifty dollars.

Hunters often found sea otters asleep in the kelp beds. When such was the case they crept up in their canoes and killed the animals with blows from a club. Often

the sea otters were shot as they swam about in the surf; then the waves washed the carcasses to the shore.

If the sea were quite calm, twenty or more men sometimes paddled out to hunt sea otters sleeping in the water. When they found one they quietly surrounded it and closed in. Since the sea otter cannot usually stay under water longer than two minutes, the men shot or threw spears at it whenever it came to the surface to breathe. Few of the animals ever escaped when this deadly kind of hunting was used.

Nets were often spread on the kelp beds and the otters were then caught in them much as fish are caught. This was a good method of hunting, for all but the best and biggest animals could be set free if they were not desirable.

Perils of sea otter hunting. Altogether, sea otter hunting was an exciting and dangerous business. Accidents were very common and many men even lost their lives while hunting in stormy weather. Shipwrecks frequently occurred. Finally, the Indians of the Northwest Coast, a bold and warlike people, sometimes attacked and captured the ships and killed the crews.

Fur traders come to the Northwest Coast. Although the Russians had the fur hunting of Alaska all to themselves, the Northwest Coast was made known to other traders as a result of Captain Cook's voyage. British merchants in different parts of the world soon took advantage of the news. Within a few years four separate expeditions under the leadership of Englishmen, one of them from China, two from India, and one from England were sent out.

Meares, an Englishman, begins a colony. The English expedition which had most influence on Oregon history was that of the year 1788, commanded by Captain John Meares. He was a tricky man with shrewd plans for getting the best of the fur trade for himself. As a first step, Maquina, the Indian chief at Nootka Sound, was

From an Old Print

THE LAUNCHING OF *THE NORTHWEST AMERICA*
This took place at Nootka Sound on September 20, 1788.

induced to sell him a large piece of land for two pistols and some pieces of copper. Meares then brought over seventy Chinese workmen and provided them with wives from the Hawaiian Islands. He had them erect a few buildings, including a small fort, and then set them to building a little vessel. This was the first ship built on the Northwest Coast; it was appropriately named *The Northwest America.*

Spaniards visit Nootka Sound. Nootka Sound, with its hundreds of painted and feather-capped Indians, its English crew, its Chinese laborers, and brown-skinned Hawaiian women, must have presented a strange sight at that time. No doubt that is what a certain Spanish captain thought, when, one day, he bravely sailed his warship into the harbor to find out what was going on there.

He was not at all pleased to find the beginnings of a British colony in a country which Spain claimed as hers alone. He had learned that Russians were thinking of pushing down into the Oregon Country, and here were the Englishmen already making themselves at home! The Spaniards wasted no time, but immediately took possession of the colony and seized three British ships, among them *The Northwest America.* They did not, however, molest two trading vessels that lay there, as those ships were flying the new flag of the United States.

Settlements on the Northwest Coast. The British government was very angry at what the Spaniards had done, and the two nations nearly went to war about the matter. Spain finally paid Meares for what he had lost, and then agreed to let the British make settlements along the Northwest Coast. A few years later Spain acknowledged the right of any country to occupy land in that region at points where Spanish settlements had not already been made.

The British might have returned at once to the Oregon Country, but a series of terrible wars which broke out in Europe at that time kept them busy there. As a result, after 1800 trading on the Northwest Coast fell almost

entirely into the hands of citizens of the young United States, because of their interest in the region.

The plans of John Ledyard. The first American who wanted the United States to acquire trade and territory in the Oregon Country was John Ledyard, the young corporal who had visited that region with Captain Cook. He had run away from college, and, after his voyage with Cook, he returned home with this great idea in his mind just before the close of the Revolutionary War.

Ledyard first wrote a book in which he told what he knew about the Northwest Coast. Then he tried to induce merchants and other men who had money to fit out ships for an exploring and trading voyage. He had small success in that, however, because most of them thought he exaggerated the chances of making large profits. Robert Morris, a rich merchant of Philadelphia, would have helped him, but Morris had already spent most of his money helping the Americans during the Revolution.

With only four dollars of his own money left, Ledyard borrowed money and went to France. There he met an American sea captain, John Paul Jones, and the American Minister to France, Thomas Jefferson. He convinced both that his scheme was a good one. Jones lent him money and planned to go out with him, but gave up the plan when he learned that the United States government thought it a useless adventure.

In spite of this great disappointment, Ledyard went from France to Russia in the hope of getting help from somebody in that country. He went across Europe afoot,

walking the last twelve hundred miles in seven weeks. From the Empress of Russia he obtained permission to join a Russian exploring party to the Pacific Coast. He intended to tramp from there entirely across the American continent, for no white man had yet done that and consequently the interior was almost wholly unknown.

Ledyard had nearly crossed Siberia when the Empress of Russia changed her mind. She had him arrested, brought back, and sent out of the country to England. This last disappointment was too much for the young American. "I give up," he wrote to his friends. He had lost all his money and his health as well. Later he joined an exploring expedition to Africa and there died.

It is sad to record the complete failure of those first American plans, but Ledyard had not worked wholly in vain. Thomas Jefferson had become interested in the Oregon Country and he never once forgot about it.

Some early American traders. It was not long after Ledyard's failure before new information made a group of Boston merchants believe that after all there might be profit in a trading voyage to the Northwest Coast. One of the leaders among those Boston merchants was Dr. Charles Bulfinch, around whose warm fireplace all used to meet to discuss their plans.

On October 1, 1787, two ships sailed out of Boston Harbor on a long voyage which was to be filled with adventure. The larger of the two boats, the *Columbia,* was commanded by Captain John Kendrick, who led the expedition. The smaller vessel, the *Lady Washington*, was a sloop of only ninety tons, a little ship about the size of the *Santa Maria* which carried Columbus to America.

The *Lady Washington* was in command of Captain Robert Gray, who was soon to win an unforgettable name for himself in Oregon history.

The voyage of Kendrick and Gray. As Captain Kendrick was not a hustler, there were many delays at the start, and even after they reached the Pacific Ocean the two ships became separated. Gray did not wait for

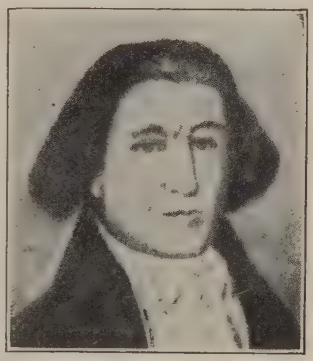
Courtesy of the Oregon Historical Society

THE SHIP *COLUMBIA* AND THE SLOOP *LADY WASHINGTON*

his slower companion, but sailed alone. Neither of the two captains knew that the Spanish authorities in the New World had received orders from Spain to arrest them. Fortunately Gray did not stop at any Spanish port, but sailed on, even though he was in need of food, water, and fresh grass for the animals which he had on board. At last, in midsummer, 1788, he stopped in Tillamook Bay where he hoped to obtain needed supplies from the Indians.

Gray's adventure in Tillamook Bay. A crowd of Indians, throwing feathers into the air to show their friendship and good intentions, came out in oddly carved canoes to visit Gray's ship. They were willing to trade food to the white men, and they exchanged berries, crabs, and salmon for brass buttons. The next day they brought out skins for which they asked knives and other weapons.

About two days later ten of Gray's men went ashore to dig clams and to cut grass. The Indians had been waiting for just such a chance. Presently, one of them seized a cutlass belonging to a negro boy who had joined the crew in South America. The boy chased the thief, and having gone out of reach of his companions he was killed before his comrades could come to his assistance. The Americans barely escaped to the ship, and even then they were able to drive off the treacherous enemy only with cannon shot. So soon as the wind was right Gray sailed away northward, while the Indians who were left standing along the shore yelled and jeered triumphantly.



CAPTAIN ROBERT GRAY

Americans visit Nootka Sound. The *Lady Washington* stopped frequently along the coast to trade and as Gray was now very careful there was no more trouble with the Indians. At last the ship entered Nootka Sound in September, 1788, almost a year after the departure from Boston.

At Nootka Sound Gray met the Englishman, Captain John Meares, and assisted at the launching of *The Northwest America.* A cannon salute roared out from Gray's vessel as the newly built English ship slid into the water. The Indians along the shore shouted and yelled, and a Hawaiian chief, who was on board the vessel as it came down the ways, clapped his hands and shouted in pleasure at the new experience.

Meares tries to get rid of the Americans. Meares appeared to be quite friendly, but really he was secretly making plans to trick the Americans and discourage them so they would go away and leave all the fur trade to him. He declared that it was impossible to stay in Nootka Sound during the winter, he said that furs were scarce, and he claimed that he had obtained only fifty pelts during his whole stay. The last was untrue for he had a valuable cargo of furs in his ship at the time.

Gray was not the kind of man who could easily be tricked. He stayed on, though he was not having much success in trading. Meares had cheated the Indians so often that they were very suspicious so long as he stayed there. Finally he sailed away to India. Then the Indians, willing to trade, came to the American vessel.

Before sailing away Meares played one last trick on Captain Gray and his men. When he left he offered to take with him any letters the Americans might want to send. Then, when he was out of sight, he set the letters adrift in a small boat which finally drifted ashore and was found by the Americans. The day following Meares' departure Captain Kendrick arrived at Nootka Sound. There the two American captains spent the winter.

The capture of Meares' trading colony. When spring arrived the Americans resumed their trading for furs. They were still at Nootka Sound when the Span-

From an Old Print

THE SHIP *COLUMBIA*

iards came and drove the British away. This took place during the summer, after two of Meares' ships had returned from India.

As the Spaniards and the Americans were quite

friendly, Gray and Kendrick were no doubt secretly pleased and amused to see their tricky British rivals get into trouble. Captain Gray afterwards named one of his children after a Spanish captain whom he greatly admired. The Spaniards did not object to the presence of the Americans because they did not think the latter were trying to take possession of any land.

Gray returns to the United States. The two Americans now decided that Captain Gray should take the larger ship and return to Boston. Accordingly all their furs were loaded into the *Columbia,* and Gray sailed away. He went first to China, where he traded furs for tea; then he sailed homeward by continuing his voyage around the globe. Gray's ship first carried the American flag around the world, and before the trip ended it had made a journey of about fifty thousand miles.

The adventures of Captain Kendrick. After making a trip to China, Captain Kendrick returned to Nootka Sound and continued to trade for furs. On one occasion the Indians nearly captured his ship. The captain only prevented that by seizing the chief and throwing him into the sea. The Indians fled, but they later had their revenge. They killed a party of Americans who had come ashore, among them Kendrick's son. They scalped the boy and left his scalp on the beach.

Some time after this Kendrick bought several large tracts of land from the Indians at Nootka Sound. He managed to avoid the Spaniards by going to Clayoquot Bay, which lies a short distance to the south. Captain Kendrick was a brave man, but he was never very successful in carrying out his plans. He was not even able

to do anything with the land he had bought from the Indians. His career lasted for about three more years; then he met his death by accident in the Hawaiian Islands.

The second voyage of Captain Gray. Six weeks after Gray returned to Boston from his trip around the world, he was again on his way to the Northwest Coast. Although the first voyage had not been very profitable, nevertheless Gray's employers had much confidence in him. In June, eight months after he sailed, he again arrived on the Pacific coast and reached Captain Kendrick's little trading post at Clayoquot Bay.

After a voyage to the north, where some of his men were murdered by the Indians as those of Kendrick had been, Gray returned to Clayoquot Bay and erected a small fort. He also set his men to work cutting down trees and sawing out lumber to build a boat. This little sloop, the *Adventure,* was the second ship built on the Northwest Coast. As both Meares and Gray could see even in those days, the forests of the Oregon Country provide some of the best timber in the world for building ships.

The Indians plan to attack Gray. Although Captain Gray had always treated the Indians well, and had often given them medicine when they were sick, the temptation to rob the Americans was too much for the natives. One day a Hawaiian boy, whom Gray had brought with him, learned of a dreadful plot set afoot by the natives. At once he warned the captain. Two thousand Indians had gathered to capture the fort and the ship and to kill all the white men.

As there were less than twenty Americans altogether, Captain Gray at once ordered his men aboard the *Colum-*

bia. The next day cannon were fired into the woods at the crowd of Indians whom the Americans could see. The Indians soon wanted to make peace but Gray refused to do so. Instead he decided to sail to some place where he could trade with less danger.

Gray discovers the Columbia River. Gray was inclined to believe in Heceta's story that a large river flowed into the Pacific Ocean at some point further south. Meares, the Englishman, had not thought so, for he had

From an Old Print

CAPTAIN MEARES ON THE STRAIT OF JUAN DE FUCA

failed to find any traces of it despite his careful search. Indeed, he had given Cape Disappointment its name because he found no river.

Nevertheless Gray set out for the southern stretches of coast. For nine days heavy winds kept him at sea. Then he sailed northward again, and on the way he met Vancouver who told him he must be mistaken about the supposed river. In spite of Vancouver's suggestion the stubborn American captain again turned southward to make a second attempt.

Both Gray and a young Boston boy who was aboard

the *Columbia* have left records of what took place on those voyages. After another fight with Indians, this time at Gray's Harbor, Gray steered southward to Cape Disappointment. At last he succeeded in making his way through the sand bars to a well-sheltered harbor. There the Indians came out to trade. A few days later Gray decided on an attempt to enter the river itself.

It was a morning in early May. The river channel was narrow and winding but as Gray steered his ship carefully he crossed the sand bar. Then, before noon, he found that his ship was on a large river. He anchored on the northern side of the stream near an Indian village.

There the Americans spent a busy ten days. The blacksmith pounded out iron implements which the Indians wanted in exchange for their furs; the sailors filled the water casks and cleaned the ship. Gray explored the river upward for some twenty or thirty miles, and buried some pine-tree shillings as proof that he had visited the spot. The stream itself he named Columbia's River.

Lack of interest in Gray's discovery. After that voyage Captain Gray never again returned to the Northwest Coast. Little attention to his great discovery was given by anyone except other traders who soon began to visit the Columbia River, now that Gray had proved the existence of the great waterway.

Captain Gray, the brave American explorer, died a poor and obscure man about 1806. He never knew that some of his countrymen returned from an overland exploring trip to Oregon that same year, nor did he know that they had traveled down the river he discovered, or that they had encamped near its mouth.

Englishmen explore the Columbia River. So soon as George Vancouver learned about the great river which he had missed on his many exploring trips, he sent one of his lieutenants to see what it was like. The English ship not only entered the river but also explored it for a hundred miles above its mouth. The English commander named a deep bay near the entrance for Gray, but because he went so much farther up the river than the American had gone he took possession of the country in the name of the king of Great Britain. Vancouver named Mount Hood after a famous English admiral, and Mount Saint Helens after one of his own friends. Besides these, many other names in Oregon and Washington today remind us of the time when Great Britain claimed the Oregon Country.

The progress of Russian exploration. As the northern fur regions began to yield fewer furs, the Russian fur traders pressed on southward. By the end of the eighteenth century about two hundred thousand furs had been taken from Alaska. The Russian-American Fur Company, which was organized by Baranoff and Sheilkoff in 1799, secured a complete monopoly of the hunting in America, so far as the Russians were concerned. Sitka, in Alaska, was founded in that year, and Baranoff was made governor of all the Russian holdings in America.

Captain Cook had already proved the existence of fur-bearing animals further southward. A knowledge that furs could be obtained south of Alaska, and the necessity of providing themselves with supplies, induced the Russian colonist-traders to found settlements where grain and cattle could be raised. In 1813 such a post was es-

tablished at Bodega Bay, in California. This proved to be a rich fur region. In 1820, Fort Ross, a large trading post, was founded; it remained under Russian control until 1840, when the Russian-American Fur Company withdrew because the fur-bearing animals were at that time practically extinct. The Russian activity in North America reached its height during those twenty years. At that time twelve vessels and thirty forts were required for a commerce which extended along two thousand miles of coast.

Nature of the trade in furs. China was the great market for the products of the Pacific fur trade, although her ports were closed to the Russians and open to other foreign ships only under irksome restrictions. The Russians occupied the best geographical location for profitably carrying on a trade in furs with the Chinese, for they could carry their wares into their own domain close to the Chinese boundary. Irkutsk was the great Russian fur mart to which the Chinese merchants came to trade. The remaining furs were sent on westward to St. Petersburg (Leningrad) or Moscow. Canton, in South China, was the port used by other nations.

There was no regulation of the hunt, such as restricts the diamond supply at the present day, and consequently violent fluctuations in price occurred. Prices in the last two decades of the eighteenth century fell to thirty dollars, to twenty dollars, and even to fifteen dollars a skin. Then, owing to a decrease in the number of skins, the price began to rise again. During those years some twelve thousand pelts were annually sent to China, most of them being carried in American ships.

Even though the expenses were heavy, the returns from a successful voyage were enormous. Traders had to run chances of loss through spoiling of furs, trade hindrances, shipwreck, and robbery. The British in India were prevented from becoming rivals of the Russians because the East India Company had a monopoly of the Chinese trade. British traders partially avoided this handicap, however, by sailing from the Portuguese port of Macao, which lies off the southern coast of China, in ships flying the Portuguese flag. The colonial revolution freed the American traders from that restriction, which in part accounts for the preponderance of American traders in the Orient from 1790 to 1814. As the number of available furs decreased, traders from some countries ceased operations; the Americans, however, made up the loss by engaging in commercial ventures of other kinds.

Importance of the Hawaiian Islands. To all except the Russians the Hawaiian Islands were an indispensable factor in trading along the Northwest Coast. Ships from Boston stopped there after rounding Cape Horn; then they sailed on to the Columbia River or Nootka Sound region, traded for some months, and then returned to the Hawaiian Islands. There they took on a load of sandalwood and sailed for China. Such vessels usually returned to Boston by crossing the Indian Ocean and rounding the Cape of Good Hope. Voyages lasted from two to three years. Most of the ships from England and India followed the same route. In the Oriental markets the furs and sandalwood were exchanged for tea, silk, and such wares, which were then brought home. The

actual cost of such goods was represented only by the trifles given to the Indians for their peltries, plus the ordinary expenses incurred in making the expedition.

How the traders treated the Indians. Although British and Americans accused one another of mistreating the Indians in their dealings with them, neither systematically enslaved the tribes as did the Russians in Alaska. There, natives and fur-bearing animals alike suffered from the ruthless scramble for wealth. Fur trading, however, was no life of ease, for in addition to the perils that have been mentioned, scurvy, the dread scourge of the sea, was an ever-present danger.

We may say that the Pacific fur trade covered the century beginning with 1741 and ending with the withdrawal of the Russian-American Fur Company in 1840. In the meantime it caused a movement by land even more far-reaching in importance.

Thorough exploration of the coastline. First came the explorers and then came the fur traders. As a result of the effort not to miss a single valuable fur, the Northwest Coast was thoroughly investigated. Spain, Great Britain, and the United States took part in this work, and explorers from those countries gave names to different places so as to prove the claims of their respective nations. Even the Russians thought about pushing southward to see if they too could not find something of value there.

Very little was known, however, of what might lie inland. Nootka Sound was the first place of importance in Oregon history; the Columbia River became the second. The interior of the Oregon Country was to be the next scene of adventure and rivalry among nations.

ADDITIONAL READINGS

CAREY, C. H. *History of Oregon*, pp. 97-108; 129-148.
CHAPMAN, C. H. *The Story of Oregon and Its People*, pp. 9-20.
JOHNSON, S. V. *A Short History of Oregon*, pp. 31-35; 56-92.
JUDSON, KATHERINE B. *Early Days in Old Oregon*, pp. 13-24; 25-30.
LAUT, A. C. *Vikings of the Pacific*, pp. 210-241; 242-262; 62-79.
SCHAFER, JOSEPH. *History of the Pacific Northwest*, pp. 15-24.
SKINNER, CONSTANCE L. *Adventurers of Oregon*, pp. 12-26.

QUESTIONS

1. Why were the Spaniards not interested in the fur trade?
2. What advantages did the Russians have in the fur trade of the Pacific?
3. Why is it fortunate that China and Japan were at that time not enterprising nations like Britain?
4. Why did John Ledyard's plans fail? Why should he be remembered in Oregon history?
5. Why did American traders receive no help from their government?
6. Why did Russians seek to settle south of Alaska?
7. In what ways were the Hawaiian Islands of value to the fur traders?
8. Write a short story about a sea otter hunt.
9. How were the Indians treated by the fur traders?

MAP WORK

1. On a wall or blackboard map, indicate Gray's voyages.
2. Locate places named by Vancouver and Gray.
3. Point out the parts of the Oregon Country still unknown during the period discussed in this chapter.

CHAPTER V

THE OVERLAND SEARCH FOR THE WESTERN SEA

WHILE the ships of different nations were prowling up and down the Pacific coast, men were trying to cross the continent by coming from the eastern side. They found many difficulties in their way. One was the great width of the continent; another was the danger of Indians; a third was the tremendous mountains which hem in the Northwest Coast. It required brave men to face such obstacles to progress. The story of how the Oregon Country was finally reached from the land side is a tale filled with romantic accounts of adventure.

Some early French explorations. The first Frenchmen who came to North America were in search of a route to China. Instead of a narrow body of land having a strait through it somewhere, they discovered an immense country rich in furs. Beginning with the St. Lawrence they followed the rivers and Great Lakes inland. They trapped and traded, but at the same time they kept their eyes open for a passage to the western sea.

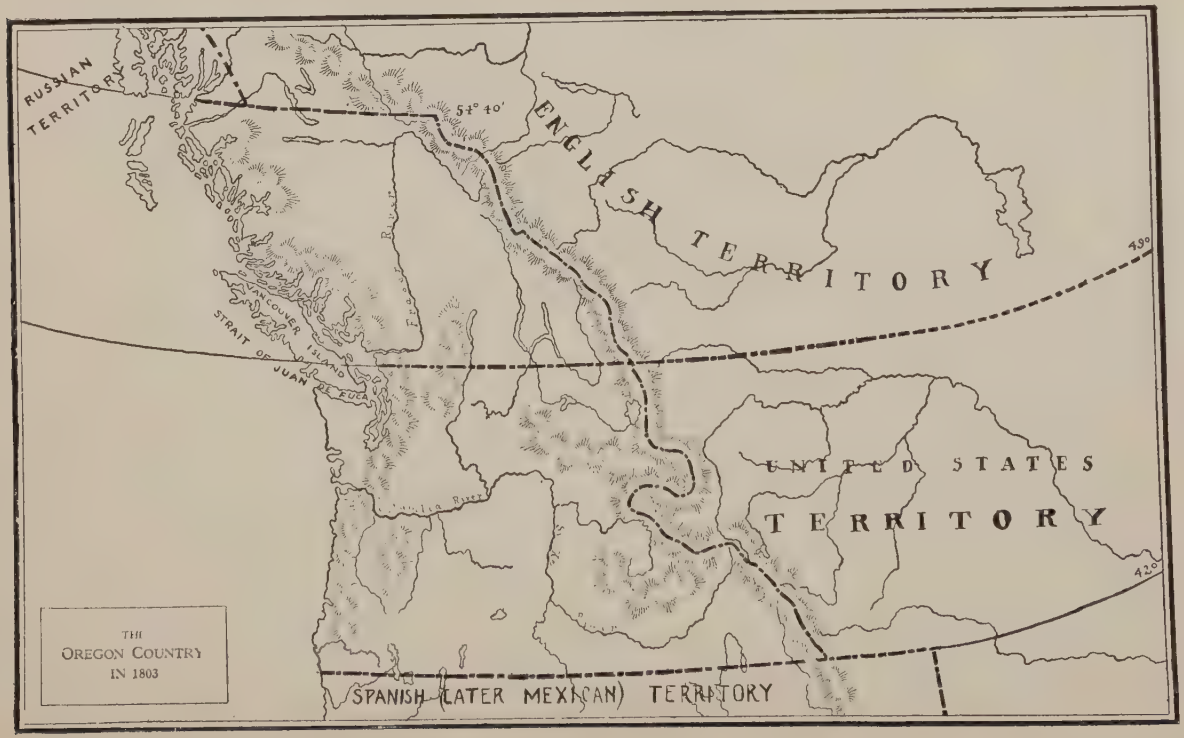
As a result of the French explorations about half the continent had been fairly well explored by the time of the American Revolution. Some bold men had even pushed into the unknown western country. They brought back

reports of mighty mountains lying beyond, and of a great river, which, the Indians told them, flowed into bitter-tasting water. They knew this last must be the ocean.

The French woodrangers. The Frenchmen who in the early days explored and trapped in North America loved the great forests and the wild free life of the Indians. Often they did not come back from their hunting trips to the French settlements along the lower St. Lawrence River, but remained with their red friends of the woods and prairies. Many of them even took Indian wives. They and their children became the most skillful canoemen and hunters in the country. Because of their wild life such men were called *coureurs de bois* or woodrangers; those who became boatmen were called *voyageurs*. Those men played a very important part in the exploration of the great West and in the early history of the Oregon Country. Explorers needed their services as canoemen, hunters, and guides. Too, they helped to keep exploring parties on good terms with the Indians, of whom some were their relatives, nearly all, their friends.

Great Britain's interest in the West. After a great war with Great Britain France had to give up all her land in North America. Many years earlier a British company had built forts about Hudson Bay and had traded with the Indians of that region. At last Englishmen became curious to learn something about that strange West which was now divided between them and the Spaniards.

Origin of the name *Oregon*. In 1765 Major Robert Rogers, who had been an officer in the English army at Fort Detroit, tried to organize a party to explore the un-


RUSSIAN TERRITORY
54° 40'
ENGLISH TERRITORY
49°
VANCOUVER ISLAND
STRAIT OF JUAN DE FUCA
UNITED STATES
TERRITORY
42°
SPANISH (LATER MEXICAN) TERRITORY
THE OREGON COUNTRY IN 1803

known West. The Indians, he said, had told him of a river "called the *Ouragan,* which flows into the Pacific."

Major Rogers did not at first succeed in organizing his expedition; a few years later, however, he returned to England and tried again. In his letters and journals written at that time Rogers spelled the name of the river, "Ourigan." From what the Indians had said, he believed that the source of this river lay only thirty miles west of the source of the Missouri. He knew that if this were the case it would be possible to travel in a canoe almost entirely across North America.

Again Rogers failed. The second failure was probably due to the outbreak of the American Revolution, which began only a year or two later.

Jonathan Carver names the river *Oregon.* Jonathan Carver was an American who had been with Major Rogers. He made a journey westward beyond the Mississippi River, which was, in itself, of little importance; the book which he wrote about his trip, however, became extremely popular. The popularity of Carver's account of his travels shows that people at large had at last become much interested in the little-known western country. In his writings, Carver repeated much that Rogers had already said about the River of the West, but in all his references to the stream he called it the "Oregon." Later the word "Oregon" was used by William Cullen Bryant, an eminent American poet, to designate one of the earth's most distant parts, a region where one could lose oneself

> ". . . in the continuous woods
> Where rolls the Oregon, and hears no sound
> Save his own dashings . . ."

It is not likely that "Oregon" was an Indian word. Since "ouragan" means "storm" in French, some unknown voyageur living among the Indians had probably used it to refer to that distant region in whose mountains terrible storms rage at certain seasons.

The plans of Alexander Mackenzie. For several years after the Revolutionary War the Americans were too busy to think much about exploring distant lands. In Canada, on the other hand, rival fur-trading companies were soon eagerly trying to outdo one another in discovering new territory where the animals had not yet been trapped by the white man.

ALEXANDER MACKENZIE

Among the trappers of that early day, Alexander Mackenzie, a young Scotchman employed by the Northwest Fur Company, was one of the ablest and bravest. He was not a tall man, but his muscular frame showed his vigor and energy. Bright eyes beneath a high forehead and dark hair were both kindly and commanding.

Mackenzie's first expedition took him to the Arctic Ocean. Although he and his companions amused themselves by chasing whales and paddling around icebergs, those were not the things that he had set out to find. Throughout his journey Mackenzie had seen the dim outline of mountains to the west of him. Now he knew it

would be necessary to cross those mountains in order to reach the Pacific Ocean. To prepare himself for his task Mackenzie returned to England and for two years studied sciences that would be of assistance to him on the expedition which he intended to undertake.

Beginning of Mackenzie's second expedition. Mackenzie's second expedition set out for the West in October, 1792. In that year, Robert Gray, the Boston sea captain, discovered the river which Mackenzie was hoping to find. Three weeks after Mackenzie's exploring party started they went into camp for the winter.

When spring had cleared the mountains of snow Mackenzie's little band of ten men again started westward. With the party at that time were two Indian interpreters, six gaily-clad French voyageurs, and another Scotchman. One canoe, twenty-five feet long, carried them all.

Hardships of Mackenzie's journey. On more than one occasion the men would have turned back had it not been for the leader's firmness. Sometimes they made only three or four miles a day; once they had to use ropes for hauling the canoe up one side of a mountain and letting it down on the other side. Once Mackenzie himself got lost. When he finally rejoined his companions he found that the canoe had been badly injured during his absence, and that the men were planning to return home on a raft. He had the canoe patched up and then all again continued the journey.

Mackenzie obtained guides from some Indians who said that they bought iron from other Indians nearer the coast. Under the guidance of those natives the party continued westward. One day the canoe struck a rock in

the river, and was badly wrecked; the whole party nearly drowned. The Indians stood on the river bank and wept, but did not attempt to aid the whites at all. Even after this misfortune Mackenzie would not give up. The explorers pushed ever onward, even though they at times had to cut a path through the underbrush and drag the battered canoe along overland. At last their toil was rewarded for they came to the banks of a large, gently flowing river.

Mackenzie's expedition reaches the sea. Mackenzie was sure that this stream was the River of the West. After traveling down its course for some days, however, he became impatient and decided to cut across the country to the sea. As the party continued overland the Indian villages became ever more numerous. From the dwellers in some of those villages the explorers learned that their journey was nearly at an end. At last, early on the morning of July 20, 1793, they saw before them the beach and the cold windswept waters of the Pacific Ocean. The journey was done.

Mackenzie is the first white man known to have crossed the North American continent north of Mexico. The return journey was likewise full of hardships and of dangers threatened by unfriendly Indian tribes. The river which Mackenzie discovered was afterwards named the Fraser. It was at first believed to be the same river that Gray had found, and this was not disproved for twenty years. Had Mackenzie really traveled down the Columbia River, his discoveries would later have strengthened Britain's claim to the whole Oregon Country.

Results of Mackenzie's discoveries. The brave Scotch explorer gained fame and praise for his efforts, and was made Sir Alexander Mackenzie by King George III of Great Britain. But the Northwest Fur Company made little use of his discoveries for several years. The distances and hardships of the journey seemed too great to justify their going to the expense of building posts and sending traders into that immense region west of the mountains. Finally, however, the company was suddenly roused to an interest in the Oregon Country by the news that American explorers had crossed the mountains and reached the sea.

ADDITIONAL READINGS

CHAPMAN, C. H. *The Story of Oregon*, pp. 21-23.
GRINNELL, G. B. *Trails of the Pathfinders.*
JOHNSON, S. V. *A Short History of Oregon*, pp. 35-55.
LAUT, A. C. *Pathfinders of the West.*
MCMURRAY, C. A. *Pioneers of the Rocky Mountains and the West.*
SCHAFER, JOSEPH. *History of the Pacific Northwest*, pp. 24-28.
SKINNER, CONSTANCE L. *Adventurers of Oregon*, pp. 74-112.

QUESTIONS

1. What were some of the mistakes that people once made about the geography of North America?
2. How did the explorers travel overland a hundred fifty years ago?
3. Could Mackenzie have used an automobile on his exploring trips?
4. How were the Indians useful to the early explorers?
5. Find as many stories as possible about the origin of the name "Oregon."

6. Why did explorers seek a waterway across the continent to the Western Sea?
7. What was the result of French exploration in North America?
8. What aroused Great Britain's interest in the West? On what did Great Britain base its claim to the Oregon Country?

MAP WORK

1. Show what countries bordered on Oregon when Mackenzie led his expedition there.
2. Locate the Fraser River. How far is it from the Columbia River?

CHAPTER VI

THE LEWIS AND CLARK EXPEDITION

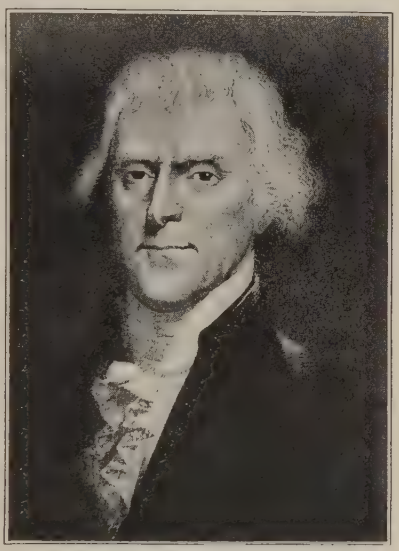
FOR ten years after the discoveries made by Gray and Mackenzie the Oregon Country was left alone except for the ships that traded along the coast. There was one American, however, who never forgot the Northwest Coast; he wondered what strange things might be found in those parts of America to which no one had yet gone. That American was Thomas Jefferson, the one-time Minister to France who had been John Ledyard's friend.

Jefferson was a statesman distinguished by his great desire for knowledge. He was persistent, too, and he would not give up a favorite plan even though years might be required for its accomplishment. He had no sons of his own, and he was very fond of a young Virginian named Meriwether Lewis. When this boy was only eighteen years old Jefferson tried to have him placed in charge of an exploring party to the West. The expedition could not be got under way, however, so the two men waited for a more favorable time.

Jefferson makes the Louisiana Purchase. Nine years later Jefferson was elected President of the United States. So soon thereafter as he could do so, he began plans for an expedition to explore the West and to establish friendly relations with the Indians who dwelt there.

At that time the land west of the Mississippi River

still belonged to Spain. Then one day the Americans learned that Spain had given back to France all the land which the French had once held under the name of Louisiana. This, as the Americans were agreed, would never do. France was a powerful nation and might some day easily make trouble for the Americans.



© *Underwood and Underwood*
THOMAS JEFFERSON

Accordingly, President Jefferson immediately sent word to the American minister in France to buy, if possible, that part of Louisiana which then lay around the Gulf of Mexico. A few months later Jefferson was much astonished to learn that the French had sold all of Louisiana to the United States. They were about to engage in a war with Great Britain, and as they needed money they disposed of their remaining North American territory in order to obtain it.

Importance of the Louisiana Purchase. The famous Louisiana Purchase made the United States a neighbor of the Oregon Country. Who was now to own this almost unknown land? On the south was Spanish territory, Russian territory was on the north, the ter-

ritories of Great Britain and of the United States were on the east. Many events took place before the Oregon Country was finally divided between the Americans and the British; it was gained by the United States only after long and bitter controversy. We can easily see how they might never have tried to claim it had some foreign country continued to own all the land between the Oregon Country and the Mississippi River.

Organizing the Lewis and Clark Expedition. President Jefferson now knew that an exploring party sent out by him could travel through territory which belonged wholly to the United States. Congress granted the small sum of two thousand five hundred dollars for expenses, and Meriwether Lewis was appointed to lead the expedition. And he was wisely chosen. From boyhood he had been used to the forest. When not more than eight years of age he had been accustomed to taking his gun and starting out at night into the woods to hunt raccoons and opossums.

From an Old Print
MERIWETHER LEWIS

Meriwether Lewis prepared himself carefully for his work as leader of the party. Although he was then a man, he went back to school in Philadelphia to study sciences he needed to know, just as the young Scotchman, Alexander Mackenzie, had done. Finally he asked

for a companion to share the leadership with him. William Clark, an old friend of his, was chosen. Then, for more than two years, those men shared work, hardship, and success without ever quarreling.

The two captains selected the other members of their party with great care. They wanted young men who were hardy, intelligent, and familiar with frontier life. From among those who offered themselves, Lewis and Clark selected fourteen soldiers, nine Kentuckians, two voyageurs, and a negro slave who belonged to Clark.

The President's final instructions to the men were that they should learn all they could in the unknown country to which they were going. "But," said Jefferson, "save life at the expense of information." The kindly President preferred to have his men return safe and know less, than to endanger themselves rashly.

Lewis and Clark begin their journey. Lewis bade President Jefferson good-bye at Washington on July 5, 1803. He then hastened on to Kentucky where he joined Clark. The party then set out for the West, but as they were delayed many times they decided to go into winter quarters opposite the mouth of the Missouri River. There they spent the winter months in drilling the men and gathering information about the surrounding country.

On the morning of May 14, 1804, a gentle breeze carried the three boats of the exploring party across the Mississippi and into the mouth of the broad Missouri River. The party was now slightly larger because it had been increased by the addition of a few soldiers who were to accompany it the first part of the way as a protection in case of encounters with unfriendly Indians.

The young explorers meet an old one. Late in May the party passed the last town on the Missouri River which was inhabited by white people. There lived Daniel Boone, the famous Kentucky pioneer, then an old man. As he watched the brave explorers proceeding slowly up the river, it is probable that he wished he were again young enough to go along with them.

Early difficulties of the explorers. Sand bars and drifting logs made the Missouri River dangerous, so the expedition proceeded at a rate of only twelve to sixteen miles a day. Later in the summer mosquitoes tormented the party. Drinking the river water made some of the men sick and finally caused the death of Sergeant Floyd. He was the only man lost on the entire expedition. Twice, however, men who tried to desert were caught and severely whipped by their companions.

WILLIAM CLARK

Only once did a fight with the Indians seem likely. The redskins tried to seize one of the small boats, but Captain Clark drew his sword, had a small cannon on board aimed at them, and in a short time convinced them that peace was better than trouble.

Winter among the Mandan Indians. After traveling sixteen hundred miles the party reached a friendly tribe of Indians, called Mandans, late in October. Then the explorers built a fort and remained among the natives

during the snowy winter. Throughout the winter months the busiest man in camp was the blacksmith. He was kept at his forge, hammering out new knives, hatchet heads, and arrow points for the Indians, and sharpening old ones. The leaders, Lewis and Clark, spent the time in writing reports for President Jefferson, making friends with the Indians, talking with visiting trappers from the British fur-trading posts, and preparing for the continuation of their journey in the spring. The men drilled, did the necessary work, and amused themselves as best they could. At Christmas time they had a great feast; afterward they danced to the music of the voyageurs' violins.

Onward to the Columbia River. When spring came the soldiers who had accompanied the party turned back. They carried with them letters to President Jefferson, as well as boxes containing stuffed birds and animals, rocks, and other natural history specimens collected along the route. Jefferson had been particularly interested in any fossil remains of prehistoric animals that might be found. How delighted he would have been to see the great bones of strange creatures that have recently been dug up in many parts of Oregon!

After the soldiers left, the party consisted of thirty-one men, one woman, and a baby. The last were Sacajawea, the Indian wife of one of the voyageurs, and her infant son. The Bird Woman (for that was the meaning of her Indian name) became one of the most valuable members of the expedition. In girlhood she had been stolen from the Indians who dwelt in the region to which the party was now going, and as she spoke the languages of several of those tribes she could act as interpreter.

The beautiful statue of Sacajawea in one of the Portland parks is a worthy recognition of the memory of that Indian woman who helped the white men to explore her native land.

The explorers enter an unknown country. Many exciting adventures befell the explorers as they advanced into territory where no white men had been before. On one occasion a bear chased some of the men into a river; at another time Lewis himself had a narrow escape from a grizzly bear, which he killed only when it was almost upon him. One morning when Lewis awoke he found a huge rattlesnake coiled on a log just above his head. Besides the many other vexations of the explorers, Sacajawea's baby had the mumps, and in addition to the usual hardships of travel, his mother had the work of caring for him.

The party enters the Oregon Country. An important stage of the journey was reached about the middle of August, 1805. At last the party came to a pass in the mountains where, on one side, the streams flow to the east, on the other side, to the west. This was part of the geographic divide between Louisiana Territory and the Oregon Country. When the party crossed it they had passed out of the territory of the United States and had entered the land that no nation yet owned.

Lewis and Clark were very eager to meet the Indians of that region; from those they hoped to obtain guides and horses and much needed supplies of food. The Indians, who were shy, tried to avoid the white men, but within a few days great good fortune befell the party: They met some members of the tribe to which Sacajawea

belonged. Among the Indians Sacajawea recognized some of her childhood playmates. Shortly afterward the chief arrived. The Indian woman's joy was redoubled when she found him to be her brother.

The Indians now did their best to help the white men, although they themselves had almost no food. The explorers shared their supplies with the Indians, the squaws mended the wornout moccasins of the white men, and through Sacajawea's pleading a guide was given them.

For weeks the party wandered about in the mountains seeking a way to the great river which they knew lay somewhere west of them. Provisions finally became so scarce that on more than one occasion a horse had to be killed for food. Finally, early in October, they reached a branch of the Snake River. Although many of the men were sick, all now set to work building canoes.

Three days of paddling brought the explorers to the Snake River itself, and within another week they had reached its mouth. There, at its junction with the Columbia River, they encamped. Great numbers of Indians came to visit them. One chief brought two hundred men who welcomed the strangers with drumbeats and singing. Lewis and Clark rewarded the friendship of the Indians by presenting them with medals, ribbons, and other pleasing trifles. Too, they smoked the peace pipe with the redskins. Then, after resting for several days, the explorers started down the Columbia River.

Lewis and Clark reach the Pacific. With the explorers went two chiefs of the Nez Percé tribe whom they had met in the eastern mountains. To make the trip as far as the John Day River required four days.

As they paddled along, the explorers saw great numbers of horses, and everywhere they saw quantities of fish drying on wooden frames along the river. The Indians sold the whites some dried fish in exchange for fishhooks and beads which the red men prized very highly.

The explorers recognized Mount Saint Helen's from

GORGE OF THE COLUMBIA RIVER AT THE CASCADES

Vancouver's description of that peak. A day or so later they reached the falls of the Columbia River. Then, aided by the Indians, they made a portage. The Nez Percé chiefs left the party at that point, and returned home after Lewis and Clark had assisted them in making treaties of peace with the Wascos. The exploring party then went on to the dalles.

After passing the dalles, they observed Mount Hood, and made frequent stops at Indian villages to purchase food. The passage of the cascades was made with difficulty. The men who could not swim went ashore and carried baggage; the others poled the boats downstream. Then they stopped and rested at Strawberry Island and ate of the abundant fruit to be found there.

The next day they passed Castle Rock and Rooster Rock. Small islands soon became numerous, but as they were keeping close to the northern bank of the river they did not notice the mouth of the Willamette River at that time. They passed Sauvie's Island without stopping.

The last few days of the journey were made in the rain. On the last day they traveled in a heavy fog. In the afternoon the fog lifted and the explorers saw before them the two capes at the mouth of the Columbia River. Beyond them lay the Pacific Ocean.

Winter quarters in Oregon. The explorers pitched their first camp on the northern side of the river. It was now the middle of November. For ten days a continuous rain made them all miserable and spoiled much of their food. Then the Indians told them that game was abundant on the southern side of the river, and, so soon as the weather permitted, they crossed over and made a camp there.

The heavy rains continued and made it hard to find a suitable camping place. One of the canoes nearly capsized when trying to round Tongue Point. At last a spot three miles up Lewis and Clark River was selected, at a place where a thick pine grove would protect the encampment from the winds. It was about six hundred

feet from the river, and thirty feet above high-tide level. By hard work, huts for the men and their provisions, and a palisade for their protection, were finished before Christmas. They named the place Fort Clatsop.

A scarcity of provisions. Almost continually the men were in want of food. Often they had only dried fish to eat, and they soon discovered that a steady diet of fish made them sick. Hunters went into the woods after elk and deer, but the rain spoiled what meat they obtained. The best hunter was a voyageur named Drewyer; more than once he saved the party from starvation. Sometimes the explorers could buy from the Indians game or fish and a potato-like root called *wapato,* but the supply of those foods was uncertain, and besides, the Indians charged high prices.

Relations with the Indians. The men were usually on friendly terms with the natives. While the explorers were still on the northern side of the Columbia, some of them went hunting, and fell in with a party of Indians with whom they had to spend the night. Although they slept with their guns under their heads, in the morning they found that the Indians had succeeded in stealing their weapons. When they tried to recover the guns by force, the Indians were at once ready to fight. Fortunately, Lewis and several companions came upon the scene at that moment, so the Indians hastened to make peace by giving the guns back to their rightful owners.

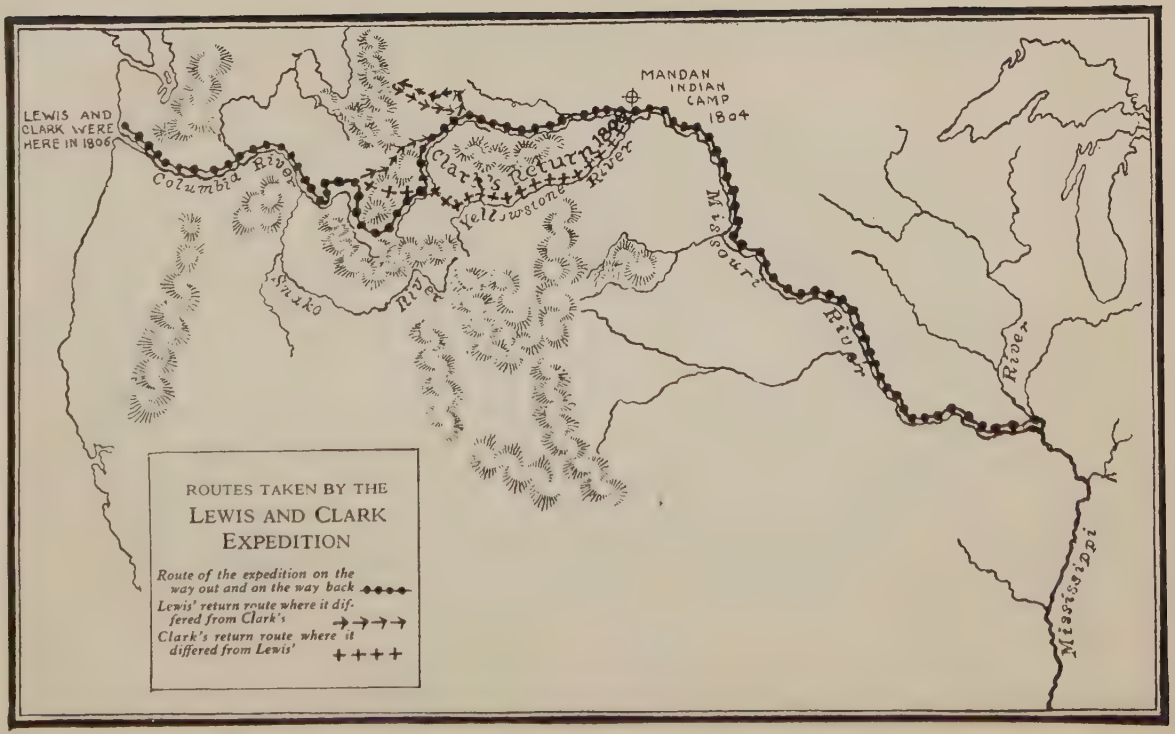
As many of the natives, especially the Chinooks, were clever thieves, the men had to watch their knives, hatchets, and kettles quite carefully. Finally the leaders of the expedition forbade the Chinooks to enter the camp. Fol-

lowing that regulation the other Indians called out, "No Chinook! No Chinook!" whenever they approached, so that they might be allowed to enter. After the palisade was completed no Indians were permitted to remain inside the camp at night.

At one time Clark visited an Indian village and was there welcomed by a hearty supper. He stayed all night at the chief's house and would have been very comfortable had it not been for the fleas, which seemed to be everywhere. Not many days later the camp of the explorers was visited by the chief of the Clatsop tribe, who brought a present of berries and roots. He was contented with a few trinkets and a razor in return, for by this time the party's store of presents was almost exhausted. In trade the favorite "money" of the Indians was fishhooks and blue beads; beads of other colors the Indians did not care for.

Salt-making along the coast. While the camp was being built five men were sent to the coast to boil salt from the sea water. By that process they secured about a gallon of salt each day. Their camp was about fifteen miles from the home fort, near a small village of Tillamook and Clatsop Indians. One day two of the men brought word that a whale had been driven ashore and that its carcass was lying on the beach. Captain Clark, with several of the men, determined to go see it and obtain some oil. Sacajawea accompanied them as she did not want to return home without seeing the ocean.

The return to the United States. In spite of the dreary winter all the men had been cheerful. Toward spring, when the elk began to retreat into the hills and


LEWIS AND CLARK WERE HERE IN 1806
Columbia River
Clark's return
Yellowstone River
MANDAN INDIAN CAMP 1804
Missouri River
Snake River
Mississippi
ROUTES TAKEN BY THE
LEWIS AND CLARK EXPEDITION
Route of the expedition on the way out and on the way back
Lewis' return route where it differed from Clark's
Clark's return route where it differed from Lewis'

it became impossible to obtain sufficient food, the explorers left Fort Clatsop and started homeward. The date was March 23, 1806.

The explorers had investigated the country so far as they were able during the winter; the hunters, particularly, had covered many miles. On the return journey up the Columbia River they found the mouth of the Willamette, which they had missed on the way down. Captain Clark ascended the Willamette River nearly to the present site of Portland. There he first saw and named Mount Jefferson.

Before the Lewis and Clark Expedition left Oregon the two leaders tried to make clear to one of the Indian tribes why they had come. They explained that other white men would follow them and establish trading posts where the Indians could buy the things they wanted. Most of the Indians seemed pleased, and as a sign of their gratitude they had a great feast at which more presents were exchanged.

The return journey was made without mishap, although the party traveled through much new country on the way. It was September when they reached St. Louis. When they arrived the whole town welcomed them. There were two days of visits, a dinner, and a dance. The following day Lewis and Clark began to write for President Jefferson a full report of all they had seen and done.

ADDITIONAL READINGS

Brooks, Noah. *First Across the Continent.*
Chapman, C. H. *The Story of Oregon*, pp. 24-39.
Johnson, S. V. *A Short History of Oregon*, pp. 93-128.

JUDSON, KATHERINE B. *Early Days in Old Oregon,* pp. 31-57.
KINGSLEY, N. F. *Four American Explorers,* pp. 9-128.
LAUT, A. C. *Pathfinders of the West,* pp. 307-333.
LIGHTON, W. R. *Lewis and Clark.*
MCMURRAY, C. A. *Pioneers of the Rocky Mountains,* pp. 1-39.
NIDA, W. L. *Following the Frontier,* pp. 221-231.
SKINNER, C. L. *Adventurers of Oregon,* pp. 27-73.
WHEELER, O. D. *The Trail of Lewis and Clark.*

QUESTIONS

1. Why was Thomas Jefferson interested in the unknown West?
2. Name three aims of the Lewis and Clark Expedition.
3. On what part of the trip did the men use canoes? On what part of it did they use horses?
4. Why did the expedition experience no trouble with the Indians?
5. What help did members of the expedition receive from the Indians?
6. Did Oregon belong to the United States when Lewis and Clark went there?
7. What was the outcome of this expedition?
8. Describe the statue of Sacajawea in Portland.
9. Write either a short story about Sacajawea's adventures, or one about Drewyer, the French voyageur.

MAP WORK

1. Trace on a map the route of the journey made by Lewis and Clark. Locate Fort Clatsop, Mount Jefferson, and Tillamook Head.
2. Point out the countries that bordered on Oregon after the Louisiana Purchase.

CHAPTER VII

ASTOR'S ENTERPRISE IN OREGON

ALTHOUGH the United States government laid no immediate claim to the Oregon Country, the safe return of Lewis and Clark to the East in 1806 made a great sensation. Among the people of the growing United States the account of the journey aroused much interest in that far-off land. Just at that time, however, the United States was having trouble with France and England, and consequently President Jefferson and Congress were unable to assist Americans who wanted to go to the Oregon Country. This was unfortunate, for it gave other nations a chance to establish settlements there before the United States could get a foothold.

Further explorations of the English. Since Alexander Mackenzie's journey the Northwest Fur Company had paid no attention to the country west of the Rocky Mountains. Now, after Lewis and Clark's return, the Company decided that Oregon might after all be worth further examination. In 1807 the Company sent David Thompson, a famous surveyor, on a trip west of the Rockies. There he stayed four years, surveying, trading, and building trading posts. He was the first white man to explore the upper Columbia River country.

The Russians decide to seize Oregon. The year Lewis and Clark returned home a Russian officer in Alaska planned an interesting enterprise. He proposed

to have a Russian warship sent to the Oregon Country to drive away the American trading vessels. If that venture should turn out well, a Russian colony was then to be founded on the Columbia River. Russia would then soon own the entire Pacific coast from Alaska to Mexico.

Americans attempt to settle Oregon. One day in July, 1809, a weather-beaten old boat, still seaworthy, sailed out of Boston Harbor on its way to the Oregon Country. This was the *Albatross,* commanded by Captain Nathan Winship. In partnership with his brother he planned to make an American settlement on the Columbia River. It was almost eleven months later when the *Albatross* sailed into the broad mouth of the Columbia.

As a site for the settlement Winship selected an attractive spot on low fertile ground about forty miles up the river on the southern side. At once some of the men set to work cutting down trees for a two-story house and a fort. Others commenced to make gardens, the first agricultural effort by white men in Oregon. When the house was about ten feet high, and the garden seed had been planted, the river overflowed and flooded the property. Undaunted, Captain Winship and his men began their work again, this time on higher ground. Then the Indians began to be troublesome and soon the newcomers had to abandon the settlement, leaving the second house and garden unfinished.

Though this brave attempt failed it did serve a useful purpose. It caused the Russians to postpone their scheme for a year; then they were too late. Another American had already gained possession of the mouth of the Colum-

bia River, and the British were rapidly pressing into the upper Oregon Country to take it from him if they could do so.

Astor plans to control the Oregon Country. When fourteen years old John Jacob Astor ran away from his home in a small German town because he did not want to follow his father's trade of butcher. He went to London where he lived for three years; then he emigrated to America. After a time he sought employment with a fur dealer in New York City for the purpose of learning the business. Within a few years he became a merchant on his own account, and by 1810 he had become the largest dealer in furs in the United States. Besides, he owned ships, and he sent cargoes of furs to China, there to exchange them for tea and other products of the East.

JOHN JACOB ASTOR

As Astor's fortune grew he became ambitious to control the entire fur trade of the United States, and if possible of all North America. He planned first to build trading posts in Oregon. Following that he would send trading supplies across the continent, using the trails which Lewis and Clark had discovered. In addition, he planned to send a ship every year to carry to China the furs collected at the Oregon trading posts. In this way he hoped to become one of the richest men in the world.

To carry out this great enterprise Astor organized the Pacific Fur Company. He was to supply the money; his partners and employees were to do the work. Some of those men were Americans, others were Scotchmen and French-Canadians who had already worked for British fur companies. Among them was Alexander Mackay, who had been with Mackenzie. Although they promised Astor they would become American citizens, none of them ever did so.

The voyage of the *Tonquin*. Astor's expeditions by land and sea were to start in September, 1810. The land party was delayed all winter at St. Louis; one fine autumn day, however, the fur dealer's ship, the *Tonquin*, sailed out of New York Harbor. Almost from the first there was trouble on board. The captain, who had once been a naval officer, did not understand how to get along with the men that now composed his passengers and crew. There were four of Astor's partners on the *Tonquin,* besides clerks, voyageurs, and mechanics.

The first night at sea Captain Jonathan Thorn ordered all lights out at eight o'clock. When the passengers refused to obey that order, Thorn said he would put them all in irons. Then one of them drew a pistol and threatened to shoot the captain. After this unhappy beginning there were quarrels throughout the entire voyage.

Thorn did not like the way the men associated together regardless of their rank; neither did he approve of their smoking from the same pipe nor their singing of songs. Sometimes the men spoke with a broad Scotch accent, and then Thorn objected because he could not readily understand what they were saying.

The *Tonquin* arrives on the Pacific coast. The *Tonquin* stopped at the Hawaiian Islands to buy a supply of hogs, sheep, chickens, and yams. Astor's partners admired the expert swimming of the natives and induced about twenty-five of them to join the expedition. Captain Thorn then sailed for the Columbia River, where he arrived late in March, 1811. As he had trouble in finding the entrance to the river he sent out two small boats to hunt for the channel. Those boats capsized in the heavy surf, and of ten men, all but two drowned.

At last the ship made its way into the river and at once the uncongenial company divided. Some went ashore to look for a site on which to build a fort. After unloading supplies, Captain Thorn, with the rest of the party, started northward along the coast to trade. It was then early June.

The story of the *Tonquin* now comes to an end. Thorn foolishly allowed the Indians to come aboard the ship in large numbers. One day, when the deck was swarming with them, the chief gave a signal to his braves and then stabbed the captain. The rest of the Indians attacked the ship's crew and soon the redskins had possession of the vessel. Then, in some mysterious way, the powder magazine was exploded. Hundreds of Indians, together with their white victims, were blown into the sea, dead and dying.

The founding of Astoria. The party left on the Columbia River was under the command of a Scotchman named Duncan McDougal. He decided to build the fort about twelve miles up the river on the southern side. The spot chosen was a high piece of ground near a

sheltered harbor. Work was begun early in April. Since the men were delighted to be again on land, they busily began to clear away the forest and to hew logs for their new Oregon home. Cutting down the mammoth fir trees was hard work, but at that the fort was completed in May, even to the roof of cedar bark. It included sleeping rooms, a dining room, a large room where the men

From an Old Print

FORT ASTORIA IN 1813

could assemble, a blacksmith shop, and storehouses. In front of the fort the American flag floated from a tall pole. This was Astoria as it existed in 1811.

McDougal makes allies of the Indians. One of the most interested observers of all that the white men did was a one-eyed old chief of the Chinooks, named Comcomley. At one time he saved McDougal's life when the Scotchman's canoe was capsized in crossing the Columbia River.

After the little party at Astoria learned from the

Indians about the terrible fate of the *Tonquin,* they began to feel that the natives were less friendly toward the white men. They knew that it would be very easy for the natives, tempted by the white men's goods, to overpower them and take everything they possessed.

McDougal knew that the one thing which the Indians feared most was disease. One day he invited Comcomley and several other Indians to the fort and showed them a small bottle. In it, he said, he held the smallpox; if the Indians ever tried to injure a white man, he would uncork the bottle and let the smallpox out. The Indians, who were much frightened, promised undying friendship. Shortly after this McDougal formed a real alliance with the natives by marrying one of Comcomley's daughters.

The British reach the Columbia River. One July day news was brought to the Astorians that a canoe filled with white men was coming down the river. All, of course, hoped it was bringing their comrades of the land expedition. When the canoe came in sight, however, it was flying a British flag at the bow. On board was David Thompson, the explorer and surveyor of the Northwest Fur Company, who had made this race to the lower Columbia in the hope of beating the Americans. Instead he arrived three months too late. Thompson and his companions were old friends of McDougal and many others at Fort Astoria. For old times' sake the Astorians treated Thompson and his men very well. But they planned to let the Englishmen have just as little of the fur trade as possible.

Already the Astorians had explored along the north-

ern side of the Columbia River and around the Cowlitz River. A party was just ready to start on a voyage up the Columbia when Thompson arrived. On his way down Thompson had built a fort at Spokane and had posted a notice claiming the country for Great Britain. This fact did not frighten the Astorians at all. David Stuart, with his party, started up the Columbia River a week after Thompson arrived. Later Stuart built a fort at the point where the Okanogan River joins the Columbia. This was the second American trading post located in the Oregon Country. Its location for trade was better than that of the British fort situated farther up the river. The contest between the British and the Americans for the control of the Oregon Country had now fairly begun. The next event of importance was the arrival of the overland expedition sent out by Astor.

Hunt's overland expedition to Oregon. The expedition which Astor organized to cross the continent to Oregon was in charge of Wilson Price Hunt, an American partner. One of the chief difficulties that delayed Hunt was his inability to secure suitable men. The party was to consist largely of hunters and voyageurs, who were always necessary.

In the spring of 1811 an exciting race began. One of the best men Hunt had employed was a French hunter and boatman named Pierre Dorion, who brought along his Indian wife and two papooses. A trader in St. Louis attempted to stop the expedition by claiming that Dorion owed him money. All the way up the Missouri River Hunt and his party tried to keep ahead of the trader. Finally, though, they were overtaken. A quarrel fol-

lowed, which almost ended in a fight, but fortunately peace was made at last and Hunt succeeded in keeping Dorion as a member of his exploring party.

Hunt's party had other difficulties, too. Several of the men deserted, and the Indians were often very war-

THE COLUMBIA RIVER AT THE DALLES

like. But those were small matters compared with the troubles and vexations that were to come.

The expedition gets into trouble. Hunt left Lewis and Clark's trail before he got to the country of the Mandan Indians. By going in a southwesterly direction he hoped to avoid the dangerous Blackfeet Indians. As the party numbered sixty-four well-armed men, it would have been better for them to stay on the known route

and risk an Indian attack, rather than to depart into unknown regions likely to be peopled by unfriendly and even hostile Indian tribes.

Throughout the hot summer Hunt and his men wandered westward across the plains. One of the guides played traitor and plotted to run off with all the pack horses and join the Indians. Hunt had to give the fellow rich presents to prevent this. Game was hard to find, and water finally became scarce. One night the party had to make a supper of corn meal and roast wolf. Had it not been for the aid given by some friendly Indians Hunt and his party might never have reached the West.

It was October when the party finally arrived at Snake River, in the southeastern corner of the Oregon Country. They thought their troubles were then over, so they built fifteen canoes, expecting to paddle comfortably down the Columbia. They traveled about two hundred miles, and then the river became impassable. Several of the canoes were wrecked and one man was drowned. Moreover, at that time they had food for only five days more. The expedition then broke up into four parties. The members of each party set out to find their way to Astoria as best they could. Their sufferings were terrible. After devouring their moccasins, one party had nothing else to eat for more than a week.

On New Year's Day, 1812, Hunt's party reached an Indian village in eastern Oregon. There they obtained food and had a feast. When they had finished, some of the travelers brought out their fiddles, which not even hardships had forced them to abandon, and the men of the party then cheered themselves with songs and dances.

From this point Hunt and his men crossed the Blue Mountains and reached the Columbia River, not far from the mouth of the Umatilla, where they bought canoes from the natives. On February fifteenth they paddled up to the landing at Fort Astoria. A few members of the party that had composed the overland expedition were already there; others arrived later.

The Astorians continue their work. The men at the fort knew that Astor must be anxious to learn what was happening to them in Oregon. They had been gone a year and a half and no news of their trip had yet reached him. Early in the spring a party of overland travelers started eastward, but as they had trouble with the Indians at the dalles they soon had to return to Astoria. Another party started eastward in June; it did not reach St. Louis until nine months later. There the men learned that a second war between the United States and Great Britain had been going on for nearly a year.

John Jacob Astor had not forgotten his partners in the Oregon Country. In May, 1812, his second ship, the *Beaver,* arrived on the Pacific coast bringing more men and supplies. Both whites and Indians were delighted to see the newcomers. Old Comcomley visited the ship in one of his biggest canoes, which was paddled by six strong warriors.

Hunt immediately took the *Beaver* and went northward to trade with the Indians and the Russians. McDougal, who was in command at the fort, sent out more parties to explore and to establish new trading posts.

In the spring of 1812 Donald Mackenzie, a partner in Astor's Pacific Fur Company, traveled up the Willamette

River as far as the Calapooia Mountains. On that journey he discovered a beautiful river which flows into the Willamette and named it after himself. Later in the year another party was sent up the Willamette River to establish a trading post. The men built two houses, one near the present Champoeg, the other probably not far from where Salem now stands.

Other Astorians went northward and eastward to build trading posts that should control all the Oregon Country. One of the trading posts stood in what is now British Columbia, another in the present state of Idaho. As all the trading posts carried on a thriving business with the surrounding Indian tribes, the piles of valuable furs grew ever higher at Fort Astoria. But this American fur company, which was so rapidly winning the wealth of the entire Oregon Country was suddenly ruined.

The British win control of Oregon. The Astorians first learned of the war between the United States and Great Britain from some members of the Northwest Fur Company. Those men said that a British warship was on its way to the Columbia River to seize Fort Astoria. That was bad news for the Americans. Many of Astor's men who were British subjects feared that they might be harshly treated if they were found working for an American company. At first they decided to take their furs and return overland to the United States, but they had to give up that plan because they were unable to buy enough horses until too late in the year to begin the journey. Some of the men then suggested that they retreat up the Willamette River so the warship could not follow them.

All this time the men of the Northwest Fur Company were urging the Astorians to sell them the posts and furs. Among Astor's men there was much objection to this, but finally McDougal and a majority of the others decided to do it. In August, 1813, all the Pacific Fur Company's possessions were sold to the Northwest Fur Company for fifty-eight thousand dollars. When the British warship arrived, its captain seized the post in order to make it a British possession. The name was then changed to Fort George, in honor of the ruling king of Great Britain. One-eyed old Comcomley was much grieved that his own son-in-law did not fight; in consequence he called McDougal a woman. Many of the Astorians remained to work for the Northwest Fur Company. The rest returned to the United States.

Discovery of a new route to Oregon. Seven men of the Astor party started back to St. Louis in June, 1812. It took them nearly a year to reach their destination because they got lost on the way and almost starved. They chose a more southerly route than that taken by Lewis and Clark or by the Hunt party. The route they took led them to the Platte River and thence to the Missouri River. Later it became known as the "Oregon Trail," which has become famous.

Astoria is returned to the Americans. Five years later another British warship sailed into the Columbia River. It had come to raise the American flag over Astoria again, for now that the War of 1812 was at an end Great Britain and the United States each agreed to give back to the original owner the territory won during the war. On October 6, 1818, the British flag was

hauled down and the Stars and Stripes took its place at Fort Astoria. But there were now no Americans at Astoria, and Astor himself was too discouraged to make further efforts without help from the United States government.

ADDITIONAL READINGS

CAREY, C. H. *History of Oregon*, pp. 202-251.
CHAPMAN, C. H. *The Story of Oregon*. pp. 40-48.
IRVING, WASHINGTON. *Astoria*. (Selections.)
JOHNSON, S. V. *A Short History of Oregon*, pp. 135-163.
JUDSON, K. B. *Early Days in Old Oregon*. (How they built Astoria) pp. 47-57.
SCHAFER, JOSEPH. *History of the Pacific Northwest*, pp. 71-78; 88-92.
SKINNER, C. L. *Adventurers of Oregon*, pp. 113-143.

QUESTIONS

1. What caused John Jacob Astor to become interested in the Oregon Country?
2. Why was Nathan Winship's commercial venture a failure?
3. How did Astor expect to make his venture pay?
4. What nations were now interested in the Oregon Country? Why?
5. Why was China an important factor in the fur trade of Northwest America?
6. What were some of the misfortunes of the Astor enterprise?
7. If all those aboard the *Tonquin* were killed, how do we know what happened to the ship?
8. Why was the Columbia River, rather than Nootka Sound chosen for the location of the main trading post?
9. What trading posts were established by the Pacific Fur Company?

10. Why did the Pacific Fur Company sell out to the Northwest Fur Company?
11. Give as many reasons as you can for the failure of Astor's venture.
12. Had Astor's venture been successful, in what way might the history of Northwest America have been different?
13. Who first followed the "Oregon Trail"? Why did it become well known?
14. What other routes had been followed overland to the Oregon Country?

CHAPTER VIII

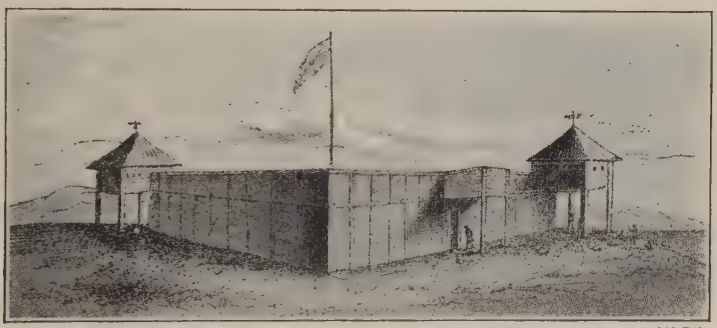
THE RULE OF THE BRITISH FUR COMPANIES

BY the treaty made in the year 1818, the United States and Great Britain agreed that citizens of both nations should have the right to go into the Oregon Country. Although American ships still visited the Northwest coast for the purpose of trading, no settlers came from the United States for almost twenty years. During that time the British fur traders had Oregon all to themselves.

In the spring of 1814, Donald McTavish, a new factor, or director of the Northwest Fur Company's interests, arrived at Fort George. He was a fat old gentleman, fond of eating and drinking, and apparently not much interested in his work or the interests of the Company. His rule, however, was short, for a month after his arrival his canoe upset in the Columbia River and he was drowned. James Keith was the next director. A better choice might have been made, for he was inclined to be jealous of his companions and he did not control the Indians very well.

Trouble between whites and Indians. The Indian tribes of the Oregon Country were so powerful that they did not fear the white men. They even wanted the men of the Northwest Fur Company to pay tribute for carrying on their trapping and trading in Oregon. Of all the

bad Indian tribes those around the cascades and the dalles of the Columbia River were the worst. The traders often had fights with the Indians when in those localities, and men on both sides were frequently killed. The Indians might have driven the fur traders entirely out of the Oregon Country had it not been for Donald Mackenzie, the most capable man among all the traders of the Northwest Fur Company. His fearlessness and skill more than once prevented war between the fur traders and the savages.



From an Old Print

FORT WALLA WALLA IN 1841

Mackenzie builds Fort Walla Walla. Mackenzie, who knew that the Snake River country was rich in furs, had long wanted to build a fort where that stream flows into the Columbia. For a long time Keith had prevented him from doing this, but at last, in 1818, the post was built. It was named Fort Walla Walla.

The Indians about Fort Walla Walla, who were unfriendly, waited for a good chance to make trouble. One day they thought their opportunity had come. All the men except Mackenzie and three others were away from

the fort and the gates had been left open. A large number of Indians crowded in pretending to want to trade. Then they began to take whatever they wanted.

At that moment Mackenzie tried a bold scheme. He seized a flaming stick of wood and held it over an open keg of powder. Then he told the Indians that if they did not leave at once he would blow to pieces the fort and everyone in it. The Indians fled, for they knew Mackenzie would do what he threatened.

More trouble with the Indians. The native tribes, however, were not always to blame for the dissensions between whites and redskins. Some Iroquois Indians, whom the Northwest Fur Company had brought from the region about the Great Lakes, caused much trouble. On a hunting expedition into the Cowlitz country they attacked the Indians there and killed several. This might have led to war had not one of the whites made peace by marrying a daughter of the Cowlitz chief and giving the Indian many fine presents.

A similar incident happened in southern Oregon, along the Umpqua River, where the Iroquois were next sent. After killing several of the native Indians the Iroquois fled to Fort George. It was because of such occurrences that even friendly tribes of Northwest Indians were turned against the white men.

Opening a new trading country. The traders of the Northwest Fur Company preferred to go to the Indians, instead of waiting for the Indians to come to them. On such expeditions traders traveled to many parts of Oregon that had not before been visited.

One of those traders, named Alexander Ross, once

had a narrow escape when on a trading trip into the Yakima Valley. The Indians were about to kill him and his men when he succeeded in winning their friendship by giving the chief a fine hunting knife.

Soon after the traders of the Northwest Fur Company gained possession of Oregon they established a new trading post up the Willamette River near the present location of Newberg. This was a good country for hunting deer and elk and for raising gardens. It supplied the fur hunters with some of the best things they had to eat.

A few years later trouble arose with the Indians along the Willamette River, and Ross was sent to settle it. He met the Indians at Willamette Falls. At first they would not smoke the peace pipe or talk with the white men. Ross waited patiently. Then one morning three warriors paddled over to his side of the river. He gave them presents and so pleased them that they said the white men might go on with their trapping.

Furs are shipped to Canada. The Northwest Fur Company did not send its furs to China, as the Pacific Fur Company had done, but had them carried overland to the Company's headquarters in eastern Canada. The caravans that made such overland trips were called "fur brigades." The first fur brigade set out on its long trip in April, 1814. It included ninety men who traveled in five birch-bark and five cedar canoes. When they started up the Columbia River their guns glistened in the bright sunlight and flags were flying at the fort. The voyageurs waved their broad-brimmed hats and the men who stayed behind cheered and fired a salute.

The brigade meets Pierre Dorion's wife. One day the men heard a child's voice calling from the shore, "Stop! Stop!" Three canoes then paddled out to meet the little fleet of the fur brigade. In one of the canoes was Pierre Dorion's wife and her two children.

She told the men of the fur brigade a tragic story. With a party of Astorians she and her husband had gone into the mountains the year before to hunt and trap. Before winter came the party divided. Dorion, with his family and two friends, built a small cabin at a point about four days' journey from the camp of the other trappers. They were catching many beavers and living comfortably when suddenly disaster came upon them. While at work the men were killed by Indians; the woman had barely time to escape with her children. As she had two horses, she managed to find her way to the camp of the other party. When she arrived there she found that the Indians had been there before her and that all the men had been killed.

This occurred in January, when snow lay thick in the mountains. The woman built a small hut of bark and furs, and so managed to live through the winter. She had to kill her horses for food. When spring came, she and the two boys made their way to a friendly tribe of Indians who lived along the Columbia River. As a reward for the kindness shown Dorion's wife, the men of the fur brigade gave presents to the Indians who had befriended her, before proceeding on their way.

Dissatisfaction with Oregon. Several of the directors of the Northwest Fur Company, whose men were commonly known as "Northwesters," were dissatisfied

with the distant trapping province of Oregon. Expenses were great and profits were small. Some wanted to abandon the Pacific coast entirely, but others would not agree to that. They kept hoping for something better and every year they sent more men and other ships loaded with supplies.

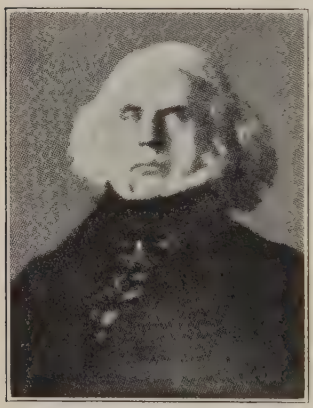
Development under the *Northwesters*. The richest fur regions of the Oregon Country had as yet hardly been touched. Those regions lay around Puget Sound and northward along the coast. It was decided to divide Oregon into two districts with headquarters for both regions at Fort George. Instead of sending supplies to northern Oregon over the long route through Canada, those were now to be sent from the Columbia River. The Northwesters also planned to develop trade along the coast, from Fort George southward to California, and northward to the Russian territory of Alaska.

In those days, too, some progress was made toward a better keeping of law and order. On one occasion an Astorian who had remained in Oregon after the others withdrew was murdered by some Indians. The governor at Fort George captured the guilty redskins and had them shot. Some time afterward a man who had been put ashore from a trading ship caused trouble by stealing and by committing other crimes. Alexander Ross finally captured him and he was sent out of the country.

The Hudson's Bay Company in Oregon. The Northwest Fur Company controlled the fur industry in Oregon only ten years. Then it became a part of the old Hudson's Bay Company which had been trading in North America for a hundred fifty years. One British

company now controlled all the immense stretch of country reaching from Hudson Bay to the Columbia River.

Arrival of Dr. John McLoughlin. When the fur brigade came down the Columbia River in the spring of 1824, it brought a man who was later to play a very important part in Oregon history. This was Dr. John McLoughlin, the chief factor, or manager, of the Hudson's Bay Company in Oregon. Because of his important position Dr. McLoughlin was usually called "Governor."



DR. JOHN MC LOUGHLIN

Dr. McLoughlin was more than six feet tall, and broad-shouldered. His sharp blue eyes looked out from under heavy eyebrows straight at the one to whom he was speaking. Men did not dare to lie to him. His voice, deep and usually pleasant to hear, became a roar when anyone made him angry. The Indians, who considered him a very great chief and who held him in great awe, called him "White Eagle" on account of his white hair.

Removal of headquarters to Vancouver. The year after his arrival in Oregon Dr. McLoughlin decided to move the trapping headquarters away from Fort George. He wished the main fort to be centrally situated in a spot suited for farming, so he chose a new location farther up the river, on the northern side. As the new location lay too far back from the river, he soon moved the

fort again, this time to within a few hundred feet of the water's edge. The fort now lay close to both the Cowlitz River and the mouth of the Willamette. Indians and traders along those rivers and the Columbia found the new post much more convenient than the old one.

Dr. McLoughlin named his new headquarters Fort Vancouver. It was the largest fur post in Oregon. The stockade of pointed logs was twenty feet high, seven hundred fifty feet long, and four hundred fifty feet wide. Two brass cannons stood at each side of the entrance. Inside the stockade were the workshops and storehouses and the cabins for the people who lived at the fort. The governor's house, a two-story log building, painted white, faced the great gates.

Daily life at Fort Vancouver. This far-away post differed from any other settlement that grew up during the colonization of America. Dr. McLoughlin ruled more like an old-time knight in a castle than like an ordinary fur trader in the New World.

Several hundred people lived at the fort and in the little village that grew up about it. No one was allowed to be idle. Every morning, from Monday till Saturday, a bell rang at five o'clock as a sign for work to begin. At eight o'clock there was a pause for breakfast, and at noon an hour's stop for dinner. At six o'clock the bell rang again to indicate that the day's work was over. On Sunday everyone rested.

Most of the men had Indian wives, as there were no white women at the fort. The men and women ate their meals separately. Dr. McLoughlin and his chief officers ate together. At dinner and afterward they talked about

business and politics and told stories of their adventures. There was a small library at the fort, for many of the men were fond of reading. One day an American schoolmaster came to Vancouver. The doctor asked him to remain, and paid him for keeping a school for the children there.

Dr. McLoughlin ruled firmly; he would allow no needless disturbance. A young man to whom he had given a horse once rode into the courtyard, making much noise and frightening the women and children. The doctor took the horse away from him and made him walk through the mud to his work for the rest of the winter. Thus order was preserved by stern measures.

Progress at Fort Vancouver. Dr. McLoughlin wanted his settlement to be self-supporting. He laid out farms and had gardens planted. Cattle and sheep were brought from California, and stock raising was undertaken on the fertile meadows around Fort Vancouver. The first apple trees were grown from seeds that were given to one of the doctor's acquaintances in London. In a few years a pretty orchard was growing at the fort.

The farms increased in size and number until finally several thousand acres were under cultivation. A sawmill built at the post cut more lumber than the people of the fort could use, so the rest was shipped to the Hawaiian Islands. The white inhabitants of those islands also bought salmon cured at the post, and many farm products raised at Fort Vancouver were sold in Alaska.

Such a plan of life as that ordered by Dr. McLoughlin was very different from that of the days when men only

traded for furs, and when they lived almost wholly on the wild game they killed when on hunting excursions.

Growth of a settlement at Champoeg. Dr. McLoughlin offered to send back to Canada several of the men at Fort Vancouver who had been working there for many years, but they told him they wanted to remain in Oregon. The governor asked them what they wanted to do. They said they would like to have farms of their own. He advised them to look for some good land along the Willamette River, and he promised them some wheat as seed for their first planting.

The first of those men to go to the Willamette River region was Étienne Lucier. In 1829 he started a little farm within the present city limits of Portland. Some two years later he moved further up the river to Champoeg, where lay some of the best farm land in the country

Other men, among them Joseph Gervais and Pierre Billeque, with their wives and children, settled there too. Because those people were French-Canadians the place came to be called French Prairie. By 1840 sixty families were living there. All the other settlements in Oregon, even Fort Vancouver, had been fur-trading posts. If the Company had ordered them to be abandoned, the men would have had to leave, as all the property belonged to the Company. At French Prairie, however, the farms belonged to the people themselves.

Dr. McLoughlin used to visit the little French settlement and there he was always a welcome guest. He scolded the settlers if they were idle, and praised them if they were busy and clean. The beautiful valley so pleased him that he took possession of some land at

Willamette Falls for himself. When he, too, should stop working for the Company, he intended to live there.

The Company's fur brigades. The busiest and most interesting time at Fort Vancouver was when the fur brigades were there. In spring and autumn the brigades arrived, bringing in the bales of furs from the different trading posts located all over the Oregon Country, and even from distant California.

Whenever the watchers at the fort looked far away down the river and saw the fur brigades coming, they shouted out the news and everyone hastened to the boat landing. As the canoes drew nearer, the people on shore could hear the men singing their boat songs. Soon there was a joyful reunion of friends and relatives who had not seen one another for six months. The furs were taken to the fort to be examined by Dr. McLoughlin, while the men rested and enjoyed themselves at home. Two weeks later the men usually set out again to the distant stations, carrying supplies and goods for trade with the Indians.

A fur brigade usually consisted of a large party which numbered from seventy-five to a hundred men. Three horses were taken along for each man, since much of the traveling had to be done on horseback. Often the men took their families with them, since there was less trouble with the Indians and among themselves when they did so. Almost every part of Oregon was penetrated by those fur brigades. They went northward to Fort Langley at the mouth of the Fraser River, and eastward into the Rocky Mountains. The Willamette fur brigade went southward even down into California.

Often when the Willamette fur brigade set out on its semi-annual trip, Dr. McLoughlin and others from the fort accompanied it for a part of the way. On such occasions members of the party wore their gayest clothes, the women had bright ribbons intertwined in their hair, and little bells tinkled on the horses' harness. Everyone got all the pleasure he could at those times, for the absences were long. On the short trips the doctor usually stopped at the Champoeg settlement to pay a visit to the people there.

McLoughlin's men explore Oregon. The Oregon Country was such an extensive region that it was not all explored for many years. The fur brigades and traders sent out by Dr. McLoughlin learned much about the region, but even they could by no means go into every part of it.

After Fort Umpqua was built, John Work led an expedition into the region roundabout. The Indians of that section were eager to give beaver and otter skins in exchange for powder, bullets, and green beads. Work soon decided to explore the mountains around the headwaters of the Willamette River. No one had yet been there, although the Indians said beavers were plentiful in the region. Three canoes were built from cedar trees, and part of the men went on in them. Taking the furs that had been bought, Work returned down the river with the other men. On the way they were attacked by Indians, but even so they finally reached Champoeg. There they were cared for by the settlers until they could go on to Fort Vancouver.

Peter Skeen Ogden was another noted pathfinder of

those early days in Oregon. He had once worked for Astor and later for the Northwest Fur Company. He was a tireless and fearless explorer. Much of Ogden's time was spent in the Rocky Mountains, where he was often in danger from Indians and rival fur traders. He discovered new trails across eastern Oregon, and on a

Courtesy of American Museum of Natural History

A BEAVER AT WORK

trip which he made into the distant and little known regions that lay toward the south he discovered Mount Shasta, in California.

Several years later, when Americans again began coming to Oregon, the Indians once attacked one of their settlements and took many prisoners. Ogden hurried to the Indian camp and succeeded in saving the lives of the captives. After that exploit he went to Oregon City where he lived until his death.

Development of agriculture in Oregon. Next to trade, Dr. McLoughlin was most interested in agriculture. He knew that some day furs would become so scarce in Oregon that the Company could no longer make a profit over expenses. Consequently he wanted to establish agriculture on a firm basis so that people might fall back upon that when furs were no longer to be had in paying quantities. The earliest attempt at farming in the Oregon Country was made at Fort Colville, which

From an Old Print

FORT VANCOUVER IN 1845

lay along the upper Columbia River in what is now eastern Washington. Although that attempt was not very successful, the beautiful farms at Fort Vancouver encouraged the doctor to try elsewhere.

In 1832 a little fort was built on the southern side of the Umpqua River, principally to protect the California trail. Around the four log cabins and stockade that composed the fort lay some two hundred acres of excellent land. The men went to work and soon had gardens and forty acres of wheat under cultivation.

A few years later other agricultural settlements were made north of the Columbia River in the Cowlitz River Valley and at Nisqually. A British company was even organized to start farming and stock-raising there. This was a great change from those days, not so many years before, when fur traders were the only white people who went to Oregon. Hundreds of cattle, horses, sheep, and hogs, and thousands of bushels of wheat, were now raised and sent to markets in Alaska, the Hawaiian Islands, and California.

The beginning of shipping in Oregon. For many years almost the only ships to be seen in the Oregon region were the few American vessels that came to trade with the Indians, and the English boats that brought mail and supplies to Fort Vancouver once a year. Dr. McLoughlin needed ships for the new coastwise trade that was just beginning. He acquired one ship in a rather amusing manner. One day an American vessel with a cargo of tin whistles, jumping jacks, toy dogs, toy cats, and other playthings sailed into the Columbia River. As the Indians were delighted with those strange trifles they took all their furs to the clever American captain rather than to the traders at Fort Vancouver. To get rid of the American, Dr. McLoughlin bought the whole cargo and the ship as well. He then hired the captain himself to work for the Hudson's Bay Company.

Keeping the Indians under control. Dr. McLoughlin controlled the Indians better than the Northwesters had done, and the natives were fairly treated under his rule. McLoughlin neither sold whisky to the Indians

nor allowed it to be sold to them, first, because it was against the rules of the Company to sell them liquor, and second, because they were much more peaceable when they had no fire water. If an Indian became troublesome, he was not allowed to come to the fort to buy the blankets, beads, and other things he wanted.

At one time the Indians made a clever plan for capturing Fort Vancouver. Several redskins came to Dr. McLoughlin and told him that the settlement at Nisqually had been attacked. The doctor made ready to send reinforcements from Fort Vancouver, when just at that time a man arrived from Nisqually and said that the story of the Indians was untrue. The Indians had hoped that, with half the men away, it would be easy to capture Fort Vancouver. Even if they had failed in the attempt many lives would have been lost and much property destroyed.

A plague destroys the tribes. In 1829, and for several years thereafter, the Indians along the Willamette and lower Columbia rivers suffered from a terrible and strange disease. Thousands died, others fled. Many villages were left without an inhabitant. One old chief who had lost all his tribe came to Fort Vancouver and was there supported by the charity of the whites. Throughout the dreadful epidemic Dr. McLoughlin tried to help the poor Indians by giving them medicines and caring for them as best he could.

The great decrease in the number of Indians made it much easier to control them. When, ten years later, settlers began coming to Oregon in large numbers, they found much of the land without Indian inhabitants.

There were no further serious Indian troubles in that part of Oregon for several years. This was due no less to the fearful ravages of the recent epidemic than to the protection which Dr. McLoughlin gave to all the settlers in the Oregon Country.

Newcomers arrive in Oregon. One spring day in 1837, the people of Champoeg found signs posted telling them to "beware of Ewing Young, the bandit." Dr. McLoughlin had received a letter from the Spanish governor of California telling him that an American horsethief of that name was on his way to the Willamette Valley. When Young arrived he became very angry and at once tore the signs down. He said that the letter was a lie. Later the Spanish governor of California admitted that it was not Young, but some men who had been with him during the early part of the journey, who had bad characters.

Later in the same year a company was organized in Oregon for the purpose of buying cattle in California. Some American missionaries who had recently come to Oregon, the settlers around Champoeg, and Dr. McLoughlin himself contributed money for this company. Ewing Young was chosen captain of the expedition to bring the cattle to Oregon. Young started out with eight hundred cattle and succeeded in bringing six hundred of them across the mountain trails and through the Indian country. So did he prove his honesty and ability. He then became a prosperous farmer on the western side of the river near Champoeg.

Many other settlers were coming into the Willamette Valley at that time. Most of them were Americans who

were independent of the Hudson's Bay Company's authority. Dr. McLoughlin treated them all quite kindly; he bought their grain and furs and sold them the supplies they needed.

The end of Company rule. The United States and Great Britain divided the Oregon Country between them, but the Hudson's Bay Company still held Fort Vancouver and several other posts. Dr. McLoughlin resigned and went to Oregon City, where he became an American citizen. At Fort Vancouver his place was taken for a while by Peter Skeen Ogden. A few men were kept at the fort until 1860. By that time much property had been stolen, destroyed, or taken for the use of the United States Army. The Company then closed the post and removed the men to British Columbia. Three years later the United States government paid the Hudson's Bay Company over half a million dollars for the property that was left and for what had been lost, stolen, confiscated, and destroyed. The days of the fur brigades, when "White Eagle" ruled and Fort Vancouver was the largest settlement in Oregon, were gone forever.

ADDITIONAL READINGS

CAREY, C. H. *History of Oregon*, pp. 252-279.
CHAPMAN, C. H. *The Story of Oregon*, pp. 49-53.
* DYE, E. E. *McLoughlin and Old Oregon.* (Dr. McLoughlin's life before coming to Oregon) pp. 60-84; 97-114; 122-129; 104-109; 134-146; 114-121.

* NOTE TO TEACHER: The selections from this book may profitably be read aloud by the teacher, or they may be assigned to pupils for study and the preparation of oral accounts to be given before the class. If the teacher thinks it advisable various episodes may be dramatized by pupils.

HOLMAN, FREDERICK V. *Doctor John McLoughlin.* (The best and most authoritative biography.)

JOHNSON, S. V. *A Short History of Oregon*, pp. 166-169.

JUDSON, K. B. *Early Days in Old Oregon*, pp. 72-82; pp. 83-95.

SCHAFER, JOSEPH. *History of the Pacific Northwest*, pp. 79-87.

SKINNER, CONSTANCE. *Adventurers of Oregon*, pp. 185-272.

QUESTIONS

1. Why did Astor not reëstablish his fur-trading stations in Oregon when the American flag was again raised over Astoria?
2. Of what importance were the Indians to the fur traders of Oregon?
3. What advantages had Fort Vancouver over Astoria as the main trading post of the Hudson's Bay Company?
4. Why was Dr. McLoughlin interested in agriculture?
5. Why should Fort Walla Walla have been selected as the location for a trading post?
6. Write a story describing a day's work at Vancover. Describing the arrival of a fur brigade.

MAP WORK

1. Locate five places in the Oregon Country which still keep the names given them by the British fur companies. What has become of Fort George?
2. Locate the fur posts mentioned in the text. Point out the routes of three fur brigades.
3. Draw a map and locate Fort George, Fort Vancouver, Champoeg, French Prairie, the cascades, the dalles, and Willamette Falls. Indicate the direction taken by the boats that went to Alaska and to the Hawaiian Islands.

CHAPTER IX

AMERICAN TRAPPERS AND FUR TRADERS

THE most valuable fur obtained along the coast was that of the sea otter; in the inland regions it was the fur of the beaver that trappers preferred above all others. The search for this animal led hunters all the way across the continent and into the Rocky Mountains.

Oregon began at the Rocky Mountains. The whole region was rich in furs of all kinds, especially the valuable beaver skins, and American trappers went there in large numbers. Many of them afterward came to the Willamette Valley to live and so were among the earliest citizens of Oregon.

The Hudson's Bay Company also sent its traders and trappers into the distant inland regions of Oregon to build trading posts there. Its men contested with the Americans and the competition continued for more than twenty years. The English company never succeeded, however, in completely driving out the American trappers. Two American fur companies employed most of the men who worked in this region. The trappers did not venture far into Oregon, but on the debatable ground the struggle was bitter.

Fights at the *rendezvous*. A place to which trappers came once each year to bring all their furs together was called a *rendezvous*. Ogden's Hole was such a place.

There also came the Indians with their furs to sell; there, too, assembled the trappers who were not working for any company. Americans and Hudson's Bay Company men were usually to be found at the same rendezvous. In the trading that went on at a rendezvous fights often occurred. If they dared to do so, trappers stole one another's furs from the caches, or places where the pelts were hidden. It was a wild, lawless time, but there was no lack of courage, and sometimes there was an unexpected display of honor.

At one rendezvous some horses belonging to the British traders stampeded and ran into the American camp. On one of them was a valuable bale of furs. The Americans were about to take possession of this as a spoil of war, when Peter Skeen Ogden's Indian wife dashed into the midst of them. Her papoose had been tied to another horse. She seized the horse bearing the baby, and the one loaded with furs, and rode away before any of the American traders could stop her. Some of the rougher men wanted to shoot, but the others, admiring her bravery, allowed her to ride safely away.

Jedediah Smith's adventures in Oregon. One of the American traders who determined to invade the fur country was a man of courage and good character named Jedediah Smith. The same year that Dr. McLoughlin came to Oregon, Smith led a party of trappers into the Snake River country and spent the winter there. This was the first American expedition into Oregon after the sale of the Pacific Fur Company's rights at Astoria. It was the beginning of many attempts to regain the Oregon Country for the Americans.

In the search for new fur-trading territory Smith entered California two years later and reached the Spanish missionary settlement near Los Angeles. The Spanish governor at once ordered him to leave the country, and he did so. He traveled slowly northward, trapping along the way, until he reached San Francisco Bay. Then he turned straight northward for Oregon and traveled along the coast. Smith's party had been very successful; they had twenty thousand dollars' worth of furs with them.

All went well until they reached the Umpqua River. There the Indians seemed friendly and the party encamped peacefully on an island near the mouth of the stream. The next morning when the party divided to cross the river, the Indians made a murderous attack upon them. Most of the men who had been left in the camp were killed. One of the Americans killed four Indians with a club which he snatched from the camp fire; he then made his escape. Smith and two other men also escaped. Naked and almost starving, they finally made their way to Fort Vancouver.

Dr. McLoughlin rescues the Americans. Dr. McLoughlin was greatly distressed when he heard the story told by the unfortunate men. The same day he sent his stepson with fifty men southward to punish the Indians. He knew that there would be no peace in the Oregon Country if the Indians were permitted to kill white men without a protest being made.

In a short time the men returned and brought with them nearly all of Smith's furs, which they had forced the Indians to give up. Smith sold his furs to Dr. Mc-

Loughlin, and stayed all winter at Fort Vancouver. He was greatly touched at the kindness he had received, and he would no longer compete with the Hudson's Bay Company in Oregon. With his partners he tried trapping in other parts of the Rocky Mountains; later, on an expedition into New Mexico, he was killed.

Another American plans to settle in Oregon. People in the United States were again becoming interested in Oregon. Not long after Jedediah Smith's adventures there, Nathaniel J. Wyeth, a young man from Boston, decided to cross the continent by the overland route and found a settlement as Astor had done. Wyeth's company consisted of about twenty men; it included farmers, hunters, fishermen, carpenters, and a blacksmith. A ship loaded with trading goods was sent out to meet them so soon as they should reach the mouth of the Columbia River.

From an Old Print

NATHANIEL J. WYETH

Early in March, 1832, Wyeth's party left Boston. They had three wagons to carry their supplies, and the axes, beads, paint, knives, and looking-glasses provided for the Indian trade. One of their wagons was built for use as a boat whenever they should come to rivers. The scheme, though, was not a success. The journey began with a show of great enthusiasm, but before the party had reached the Rocky Mountains many of the

men were heartily sick of the trip. As none of them had ever before experienced any frontier life, the expedition would have disbanded or been destroyed by Indians had its members not been helped by fur traders whom they met on the way. Even so, half the men did turn back, too discouraged to proceed farther.

A battle in the mountains. One morning just as Wyeth and the friendly trappers were breaking up their camp, they saw a large party of Indians approaching. The redskins seemed to want peace. Suddenly an Indian of a different tribe, who was with the white men, shot and killed the chief of the approaching band. At once part of the Indians attacked the camp of the whites; the others built a log barricade in a near-by beaver swamp. Although Wyeth and his comrades were unused to Indian fighting, on this occasion they acted with much skill and bravery. All the horses were at once brought into the camp, and the bales of trading goods were piled up to form a rude defensive breastwork. Wyeth ordered his men to stay behind this breastwork while he joined the other leaders of the party in the fight.

Another company of trappers who had encamped only a few miles away hastened up to give aid. When they arrived the Indians were forced to retreat to their fort in the swamp. There the white men then attacked them and the fight continued all day long. Several men in each party were killed, one white man being shot down at Wyeth's side.

When night came the Indians escaped from the fort. Wyeth and the trappers barricaded their camp and waited to see if a larger Indian war party were going to ap-

pear. The whites preferred to fight where they were, rather than be caught on the mountain trails. No Indians appeared, however, and after a few days the white men loaded their horses and hastened away from the dangerous camp.

The incident described happened in July; it was October before Wyeth and his men reached Fort Vancouver. They had been in Oregon all that time. Dr. McLoughlin received the Americans hospitably, and they stayed at Fort Vancouver all winter. The ship that had been sent from Boston never arrived in Oregon, for it had been wrecked on a little island in the South Pacific Ocean. The following spring Wyeth returned to Boston. He was poorer in purse, but he had gained much valuable information and was not at all discouraged. Most of his men remained in Oregon.

Wyeth's second venture in Oregon. After his experiences Wyeth concluded that trapping might not prove to be a very profitable undertaking; he did believe, however, that he might be able to make some money by trading in furs. His new plan was to found a little colony somewhere along the Columbia River, and then build a trading fort further in the interior. His colonists were to raise horses and grain to supply the fort, and they were also to catch salmon and send the salted fish back to Boston. A ship was to come out from Boston once each year to bring supplies and to carry back the fish. By that means the dangerous trip across the continent was to be avoided.

Once again, in the spring of 1834, Wyeth was on his way to Oregon. He had with him a large supply of

goods that some of the Rocky Mountain fur traders had promised to buy. When he reached the traders, however, he found that they had already bought their goods of someone else. Wyeth was angry at being mistreated by his own countrymen, but he could do nothing except go on and build his own fort as he had planned. He found an excellent location on the eastern bank of the Snake River and there Fort Hall was built. For the first time since Astoria had been returned to its American owners, the American flag was raised in Oregon. This post afterward became one of the most famous on the Oregon Trail; it was a great help to the later immigrant trains. In spite of the hard work of fort-building the men of Wyeth's expedition enjoyed themselves. Game was plentiful, and so supplied the chief diet of those adventurers, who declared that buffalo meat was the best food in the world. In the evenings they passed the time telling stories of their adventures among the savage Indian tribes of the wilderness.

The colony on the Columbia River. Wyeth, with thirty men, now went on to the Columbia River. He stopped at Fort Vancouver to greet Dr. McLoughlin, and then continued to the river's mouth. There his boat, the *May Dacre,* had just arrived.

Everything seemed to go well. Wyeth decided to establish his colony at the upper end of Sauvie's Island, or, as it was then called, Wapato Island. Ground was cleared and cabins were built. The carpenters and workmen had plenty to do, and the blacksmith was busy at his forge. Some of the men were set to work making barrels for shipping salmon back to Boston. The live

stock which had been brought on the *May Dacre* was turned loose, and goats, pigs, chickens, and sheep wandered at will about the little settlement. Wyeth named the place Fort William, and raised the American flag.

In those early days the Indians called all Americans, "Bostons"; they called the British, "King George men." The Indian name for the Americans shows from what part of the United States most of the early traders to the Northwest Coast had come. The name was very appropriate in this instance, for Wyeth was from Boston and the money for his enterprise had been furnished by men who lived there.

The Indians were interested in the "Bostons" at Fort William, and admired the white wool hats which the Americans wore. Nevertheless they continued to take their furs to the "King Georges" at Fort Vancouver. They were accustomed to trading there, and besides the Hudson's Bay Company's goods were cheaper than the American wares offered by Wyeth.

Wyeth abandons his colony. Dr. McLoughlin was always kind to men in distress, but even so it was his duty to oppose rival fur traders. He urged the Indians to bring their furs to him, and he had a new post built down the river, below Fort Hall, so as to insure his getting the bulk of the Indian business if possible. The Hudson's Bay Company, which had more men for visiting the Indians, could always undersell the Americans.

Before long Wyeth gave up fur trading and sold Fort Hall to the Hudson's Bay Company. He said that he had put a rock in the path of the traders who had lied to him, and that they would not be able to roll it away.

This proved to be true, for the British at Fort Hall soon controlled nearly all the fur trade of that region.

Wyeth now placed his hopes in a suitable return from salmon fishing. The year when he undertook that enterprise there were two very poor runs of salmon in the Columbia River, as is sometimes the case, so Wyeth's ship had to return to Boston with only half a cargo.

For two years Wyeth bravely struggled along with his enterprise; then he had to give it up. At last he

From an Old Print

FORT HALL

sold Fort William to Dr. McLoughlin, and returned to Boston. He bore no ill will against the British, for Dr. McLoughlin had been honorable in all his dealings with the Americans. Wyeth returned no more to Oregon. In spite of his early bad fortune he finally became wealthy by shipping ice from New England to India.

Captain Bonneville's adventures in Oregon. B. L. E. Bonneville was a captain in the United States Army. He obtained a two years' leave of absence to go on an

overland trading and exploring expedition to the West, and entered Oregon the summer that Wyeth was on his way there. The money for Bonneville's expedition was furnished by a rich man in New York who had been one of Astor's partners. Bonneville had twenty wagons and more than a hundred men with him. The travelers took along a cow and a calf, too. The Indians were much interested in those animals, which seemed quite unlike the buffaloes with which they were so familiar. They thought the calf was "big medicine" until Bonneville offered to trade it for a horse; then they had no further interest in it.

Bonneville's expedition entered Oregon by way of South Pass. This was the first time wagons had crossed the mountains, although another trader had reached South Pass with one, some two years before. Captain Bonneville had many difficulties. The traders who were in the mountains wanted to have all the furs to themselves. They induced several of Bonneville's men to desert him, and they stole his furs whenever they could. There was trouble with the Indians because Bonneville's men were often cruel and unjust to the red men. On one occasion a trap was stolen from the whites; in revenge they killed between twenty and thirty of the Indians without ever knowing which was the guilty one.

Leaving part of his men in the mountains, Bonneville went twice to the Columbia River. He tried to buy supplies from the Hudson's Bay Company at Fort Walla Walla, but was refused. It was against the orders of the Hudson's Bay Company men to help a rival trader. On his second trip Bonneville went as far as the John

Day River. Then he had to turn back, for winter was at hand and he was short of provisions. Altogether he stayed three years in the West, but most of his explorations were through country that was already well known to the whites. Finally, he, too, gave up his work and returned to the United States. He never made any report of what he had done, but a map of the country which he prepared was much used by later travelers.

From an Old Print

BRIDGER'S FORT

The "Mountain Men." The Americans whom the Hudson's Bay Company could not drive out of Oregon were the so-called "Mountain Men." Those were free trappers who lived in the mountains and did as they pleased, although they were sometimes employed by the American fur companies.

The wild life of the mountains pleased those men. There were buffaloes to hunt, beavers to trap, and Indians to fight. Often they lived for a part of the year with

some friendly Indian tribe. Once each year they gathered at a rendezvous to sell their furs and to meet old friends.

The "Mountain Men" made a picturesque sight as they rode along the narrow rocky trails. They wore clothes made of soft leather, and sometimes a bright-colored shirt as well. Jacket sleeves and trousers were trimmed with fringes, and tiny bells were often added.

As they were always in danger of the Indians, the "Mountain Men" had many hairbreadth escapes. At one time two of them, who unexpectedly met with a large party of Snake Indians, were captured. The Indians had a long debate about what they should do with the captives. Finally the savages decided that the "Mountain Men" should be put to death. To this one of the Indian chiefs did not agree because he thought it foolish to kill two harmless travelers. That night he came to the tent where the whites lay bound, loosed their bonds, and cautiously led them out of the Indian encampment without being seen. He had two horses ready for them, and in the darkness the whites safely made their escape.

The "Mountain Men" played an important part in Oregon history. They discovered trails and passes which immigrants afterward used, and many of them served as guides who protected later comers against Indians.

"Mountain Men" in the Willamette Valley. At last some of the "Mountain Men" grew tired of the constant danger and the hardships which they daily experienced among the mountains, and in consequence they decided to move farther westward into Oregon. Most of them came to the Willamette Valley and there started little farms as the people at French Prairie had done.

One of those who settled in the Willamette Valley was named John Turner; he had been to Oregon before, with Jedediah Smith. It was he who had used the club so effectively when the Indians made their attack on Smith's party at the Umpqua River encampment. Later he had another adventure of the same sort in the Rogue River Valley. He escaped from this also and then settled down on a farm near the Willamette River.

The best known of the "Mountain Men" who came to Oregon is Joe Meek. He left his home in Virginia when only eighteen years old, and after twelve years of continuous adventure he removed to western Oregon with some companions. There he started a small wheat farm. During nine years of his stay in the mountains Meek tasted no bread. One day a woman of a missionary party gave him a biscuit. Perhaps it was the taste of the biscuit that made Meek want to stop trapping and become a farmer in a land where he could make bread whenever he wanted it. Meek was never a very successful farmer. When the settlers in Oregon later made a government of their own, they chose Meek for sheriff. They knew he was a fearless and honest man.

JOSEPH L. MEEK

The "Mountain Men" were all loyal Americans whom Dr. McLoughlin treated well. He bought what they brought to Fort Vancouver, and he sold them supplies.

But the "Mountain Men" had fought the Hudson's Bay Company men too long ever to become good friends of the British traders.

One time, when Meek was at Fort Vancouver, he heard some of the British traders telling an American naval officer how sorry they were that one of his ships had been wrecked in the river. They referred to the ship *Peacock* which had been captured from the English during the War of 1812. Meek told them not to worry, "For," he said, "Uncle Sam can get another *Peacock* the same way he got that one."

ADDITIONAL READINGS

CAREY, C. H. *History of Oregon*. pp. 280-306.
JOHNSON, S. V. *A Short History of Oregon*, pp. 177-193.
JUDSON, K. B. *Early Days in Old Oregon*. (The Old Oregon Trail) pp. 127-142.
LAUT, A. C. *The Story of the Trapper*.
VICTOR, F. F. (Mrs. Frances Auretta Fuller.) *River of the West*. (Stories of the adventures of Joe Meek and his comrades.)

QUESTIONS

1. Why did not American fur traders succeed in establishing themselves in Oregon?
2. Why was it not easy for the British traders to drive out the "Mountain Men"?
3. Explain some advantages of the rendezvous as a method of getting furs.
4. Why did the old trails follow the streams wherever possible?
5. What new route to Oregon did Jedediah Smith discover? Was travel easy at that time?
6. Are old trails or roads still to be found in Oregon?

7. Relate an incident which shows that Dr. McLoughlin was a kind-hearted man. When did he help Americans? When did he oppose them?
8. How did Wyeth and Bonneville assist in opening a road to Oregon?
9. Name the American who sought to establish business enterprises in Oregon.
10. What did the Indians call the Americans in Oregon? What did they call the British?
11. What did the "Mountain Men" do for Oregon?
12. Describe a *rendezvous*.

MAP WORK

Locate Fort Hall, Fort William, Sauvie's Island, South Pass, Ewing Young's Ranch, Yamhill, Fort Vancouver, Snake River, Columbia River, and Fort Walla Walla.

CHAPTER X

MISSIONARIES IN OREGON

ABOUT the year 1832, "four native chiefs from the region around the headwaters of the Columbia River appeared at St. Louis asking for Mr. Clark of the Lewis and Clark Expedition, then resident Indian agent at that place. Their fathers had told them of his visit to their nation. From various sources, from the praise of pious travelers and the oaths of impious trappers, they had learned of the white man's God and the book He had given. And now would the great white chief grant their prayer and send religious men to point their people the way to heaven? It was promised them according to their request. Soon after, two of them sickened and died; of the other two, one met death ere his return, and the other reached his people and reported." Such, in brief, is the story of the call of the Indians that brought the missionaries to Oregon. It has now passed definitely into the realm of tradition. Let us learn, then, what the facts really are.

The missionaries' interest in the Indians. The Mississippi Valley had been settled in the time of Daniel Boone by exterminating or expelling the western tribes of Indians who dwelt there. The Indians of the Old Southwest, the Cherokees, Creeks, and Seminoles, did not come into conflict with the whites until Andrew

Jackson's time. Eventually they were removed to Indian Territory, and the rich bottom lands of the lower South passed into the possession of the rapidly expanding "Cotton Kingdom" of the slaveholders. Mistreatment of the natives was arousing the conscience of the nation. Before 1820 the Reverend Jedidiah Morse was urging that teachers be sent to the tribes west of the Mississippi River. The Methodists and other denominations already had workers and teachers among them.

The visit of Jonathan Green. Nor was the idea of establishing missions in Oregon a new one. Before 1829 the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions, at New York City, had been considering the possibility of establishing missions in that region. There had been a mission in the Hawaiian Islands since 1820. The board ordered the Reverend Jonathan S. Green to visit the Northwest Coast for the purpose of inquiring into the feasibility of founding an Indian mission in that region.

SIR GEORGE SIMPSON

Reverend Green left the Hawaiian Islands in February, 1829, and in the early summer reached Norfolk Sound, which lies at latitude fifty-seven degrees north. During the summer the ship made its way southward to the fifty-third parallel of latitude. At various places where it was convenient to do so, the minister went

ashore to gather data for his report to the mission board. He studied the Indians of the Northwest Coast and visited the governor of the Russian-American Fur Company.

Proceeding southward, the ship appeared off the mouth of the Columbia River, but owing to unfavorable weather conditions it was unable to enter. Reverend Green met Captain Dominis, of the ship *Owyhee,* who gave him some information concerning the tribes about the Columbia River. The preacher had been unable to secure that information at first hand. Following the coast line to California, Reverend Green saw Sir George Simpson, governor of the Hudson's Bay Company, who enlightened him still further on the Indians of the Oregon Country. From another official of the Company he received a list of some thirty tribes living about the Columbia River, and he was informed that they were superior in every way to the natives of the Northwest Coast.

In his report to the mission board Reverend Green advised against sending missionaries to the Indians north of Puget Sound, as they seemed too hostile and savage. He did, however, recommend missionaries for the Indians of the Columbia and Rogue river regions. The churches of the nation were therefore in a proper state of mind for establishing Christianity in the West, when an incident occurred which set in motion the entire missionary movement.

The effect of the Flathead story. The New York *Christian Advocate,* of March 1, 1833, published a letter from G. P. Disbowav which quoted a letter from a Wyandot Indian. The Indian's letter, which was dated January 19, 1833, described the visit of the Flatheads

to St. Louis, and told about them asking for religious instructors. The Wyandot Indian said he had been told by General William Clark that the Indians had come to obtain religious teachers for their people.

It matters not how much of the printed account was hearsay and unreliable, nor whether or not the Indians ever went to St. Louis. It does not matter if they went there for some other purpose. Historical movements do not always depend upon fact for their beginning. The truth probably is that two or more deputations of Indians went to St. Louis for various purposes. Some authorities say four delegations went at various times. One of the Catholic fathers is of the opinion that the Flatheads went East in response to the work of the Iroquois converts among them. Daniel Lee, who conversed about the incident with General Clark in 1834, reports Clark as saying that the published account was "high wrought," in other words, greatly exaggerated. This story was, however, the immediate cause for beginning the missionary movement.

The Methodists send Jason Lee. Within three weeks after the publication of Dishoway's letter, President Fisk of Wesleyan University at Middletown, Connecticut, wrote to the Methodist Board of Missions urging action to supply missionaries to the Flatheads. Since there was no available information obtainable about any such tribe, it was determined to establish a mission somewhere west of the Rocky Mountains. Reverend Jason Lee was chosen head of the mission. In October the board set aside three thousand dollars for outfitting the mission, and Reverend Lee arranged with Nathaniel

Wyeth, then about to start on his second expedition to Oregon, to travel overland with him. The mission goods were shipped on Wyeth's ship, the *May Dacre*. With Lee came his nephew, Daniel Lee; Cyrus Shepard, a natural-born missionary, if there ever was one, came as a teacher. Lee's party left Independence, Missouri, April 28, 1834, passed through the Flathead country, and proceeded to Fort Vancouver. There Dr. McLoughlin advised Lee that it would be too dangerous to establish a mission in the upper country, and instead suggested the Willamette Valley.

Reverend Lee locates on Mission Bottom. A site at the southern end of French Prairie, now known as Mission Bottom, was accordingly selected. The *May Dacre* having arrived in the Columbia River, the mission goods were transported overland to the place selected. A mission school was opened at Wheatland with P. L. Edwards as teacher, and an additional school was at once begun at Champoeg. The mission gathered about it the sickly remnants of the once powerful Calapooias and other tribes, and Christian instruction was imparted to the natives.

The beginning of missionary work. By the time the next spring came, some buildings had been erected, and about thirty acres of ground was then made ready for planting. All worked hard. Of the native children who came to the mission, some died of lung complaints, others returned homesick to the Indian villages. Deaths occurred frequently. By the summer of 1836 the little mission was overcrowded with children. A few conversions were made among the Indians and whites.

The arrival of more missionaries. The first reinforcement of missionaries started from the East in 1836 and arrived in Oregon during May of the following year. Among those were Dr. Elijah White, five women, and the same number of children. It was now decided to enlarge the sphere of Methodist influence by establishing a mission at the dalles. In March, 1838, Reverend H. K. W. Perkins and Daniel Lee were sent there. A house was built, and Christianity was taught to the Indians. Lee opened a trail and brought up cattle from the Willamette Valley. Farming was also undertaken, but for some reason it did not succeed.

Reverend Lee returns to the East. Jason Lee now began to see that the mission could never hope to accomplish what had been planned for it. The Indians attached to the mission continued to die. By March, 1838, Lee seems to have entered upon the second phase of his work in Oregon, namely, the founding of an American colony. In that month he began the exploration of the Umpqua River region, and made a close examination of the resources of that section. At the end of March he left the Willamette Valley, proceeded to Fort Vancouver, and accompanied by Edwards, Ewing Young, and two Chinook boys, members of the mission school, he went from there to the dalles and Fort Walla Walla. From that point he traveled eastward.

The missionaries ask government protection. Jason Lee carried with him a memorial to Congress. It had been signed by ten preachers and laymen of the mission, and by Ewing Young, who was now aggressive and restored to favor. Ten American and nine French-

Canadian settlers had also affixed their signatures to the document. The memorial told of the beginning of the settlement in 1832, and of how it had prospered during the succeeding years. A flourishing trade, it said, had sprung up between Oregon and the Far East, and people were beginning to arrive in Oregon from many parts of the world. The petition urged the government to take possession of Oregon, lest evil should ensue from the appearance of bad men. Hitherto, it said, the colony

From an Old Print

FIRST METHODIST MISSION IN THE WILLAMETTE VALLEY
Built in 1841 by Jason Lee

depended upon the good offices and assistance of the Hudson's Bay Company, but the independent settlers could not hope for an indefinite continuance of the Company's favor.

Settlers and money are secured. Lee lectured in the East as he proceeded toward New York. At Peoria, Illinois, he left one of his Chinook boys, whose tales excited much interest and caused the formation of Thomas J. Farnham's party which came out to Oregon in 1839. Jason Lee reported to his mission board and

found his work approved. His ability as a leader and organizer is shown by the raising of forty thousand dollars, and the securing of a large number of workers who came out in the ship *Lausanne* the following year.

The Oregon Emigration Society. Meantime Lee's memorial was forwarded to Congress. Caleb Cushing of Massachusetts wrote Lee for further information. In answering Cushing's letter Lee urged that the government give its protection to American interests in Oregon, that it guarantee to the settlers the titles to land settled by them, and that it guarantee to them titles to the improvements made. Very little was said about the mission work. At Lynn, Massachusetts, in August, 1838, the Oregon Provisional Emigration Society was organized to send families to Oregon, and the society began the publication of its journal called *The Oregonian*. Its pages depicted the vision of a great state dominating the Pacific area; the century-old dream of Spain and of Britain was being revived.

Jason Lee's dream was being fulfilled, too. In December, 1838, Senator L. F. Linn of Missouri, introduced into Congress a bill for the American occupation of the Columbia River region, to be called Oregon Territory north of the forty-second parallel of latitude and west of the Rocky Mountains. He wanted a fort built on the Columbia River to protect the citizens of the United States. Although the bill did not become a law, it kept the Oregon question before the nation.

The founding of new missions. The good ship *Lausanne* sailed for Oregon on October 10, 1839, and arrived in the Columbia River on May 21, 1840. The

men of the reinforcement went immediately to the missions assigned them. Reverend A. F. Waller went to The Dalles, but was later assigned to Oregon City. Reverend W. W. Kone went to the Clatsop Indians at the mouth of the Columbia River. Reverend J. P. Richmond journeyed overland to his station at Nisqually. Clearly, this establishment of a mission was designed to curb the pretensions of the Puget Sound Agricultural Company, a

From an Old Print

THE METHODIST MISSION AT THE DALLES IN 1840

British enterprise. Jason Lee and others explored the Umpqua River for a mission site, but decided against attempting work there. George Abernethy, destined to become the first governor of Oregon, the Reverend Josiah L. Parrish, Joseph Frost, who with Daniel Lee wrote a book about the Oregon Country, and other workers and teachers were variously assigned to positions.

Removal of the first mission. The mission on French Prairie was removed to Chemeketa, the present site of Salem, ten miles south of its original location, in

1842, and a mill was erected there. Dr. Elijah White supervised the building of the mission hospital. He got into a dispute with Jason Lee regarding the work, resigned, and returned to his home in the East. In the autumn of 1842 the mission's manual labor school opened. January 11, 1842, at Lee's house, plans were laid for the education of the children of the settlers. Members of other denominations were present. Out of this and subsequent meetings the Oregon Institute was founded. It later developed into Willamette University.

The removal of Jason Lee. Early in 1844 Jason Lee again started to the East by way of the Hawaiian Islands. At Honolulu he was informed that he had been deposed as head of the mission, and that Reverend George Gary was on his way to Oregon to investigate affairs. Lee, however, went on to New York and reported to the mission board. From there he went to his old home where he died on March 2, 1845.

Lee was superseded just at the moment when his services were most valuable. His missions covered the whole Oregon Country from Nisqually to the Umpqua River and from the dalles to Clatsop. His great service was to establish in Oregon an American colony of thrifty, inteligent, and industrious men and women. He also helped to advertise Oregon in the East by means of the speeches he made while on his visits there. He deserves to be considered as one of the men who helped to make our state.

The beginning of the Whitman Mission. In May, 1835, the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions sent out Reverend Samuel Parker to ex-

plore the West and to find a suitable site for a mission. He was accompanied by Dr. Marcus Whitman, who, after reaching Green River, left Reverend Parker and returned to St. Louis to secure teachers for the mission. Reverend Parker proceeded to the Columbia River country and arrived at Fort Vancouver on October 16, 1835. Ground for missions was selected at Waiilatpu among the Cayuses, at Lapwai in the Nez Percé country,

From an Old Print

THE OREGON INSTITUTE

and in the Spokane region. Waiilatpu was the central one of the Indian missions established in this region.

After preaching many sermons to both Indians and whites, and receiving deputations from several tribes that were asking for teachers, some of which were promised, Parker returned home by way of the Hawaiian Islands. He at once reported to the mission board which thereupon appointed Dr. Whitman to be superintendent of the Oregon missions. Mr. and Mrs. Whitman, with H. H. Spalding, then set out for Oregon. William H. Gray,

missionary and historian, was also a member of the party. At Liberty, Missouri, they joined the fur traders who were about to start westward, and the expedition arrived at Fort Vancouver in September, 1836. On December tenth, after having erected a cabin, Dr. and Mrs. Whitman took up their residence at Waiilatpu, six miles west of the present city of Walla Walla. Mr. and Mrs. Spalding went to the Lapwai Mission near the present site of Lewiston, Idaho.

Dr. Whitman teaches the Indians. As the Indians of the upper country were restless wanderers, the success of the mission depended upon getting them near to the teachers for a sufficient time. To accomplish this they were taught how to use farming implements and how to plant grain and garden vegetables. Dr. Whitman secured live stock, and soon the natives had thriving farms. They were then no longer under the necessity of migrating in search of food. Mills were erected, and to those the Indians brought their grain to be ground. They coöperated with the mission somewhat reluctantly, however, and they were troublesome from the first. They learned the precepts of Christianity, but they remained primitive men and it was necessary to resort to primitive methods of controlling them.

Trouble with the Indians. With the increase of wealth among the Indians, especially among those whose herds were numerous, they assumed a proud and haughty air, an air of superiority. They became increasingly insolent as time went on. The people of the missions were often insulted, and occasionally they were openly assaulted. The Indians pulled Dr. Whitman's hair on one

occasion, and at another time they threw his hat into the dirt. In 1838 the mission force was increased by the arrival of Reverend Cushing Eells, Reverend A. B. Smith, and Cornelius Rogers. Gray, who had gone East, returned with his wife that year. As the insolence of the Indians increased, Smith, Gray, and Rogers left the upper country in 1841, and thereafter resided in the Willamette Valley. Further reinforcements were asked of the mission board, but they were not granted.

Whitman's winter journey to the East. In September, 1842, Dr. Whitman received notice that the missions at Waiilatpu and Lapwai were to be closed. Believing this was an error of judgment on the part of the mission board, and that if he were withdrawn all his work would accrue to the benefit of the Roman Catholic missionaries who were now coming into the country, he decided to protest in person to the board. On October 3, 1842, he left with A. L. Lovejoy to cross the Rocky Mountains on his way to the East. Only a man of iron nerve and dauntless courage would have undertaken such a trip. Deep snows were encountered. At Taos, Lovejoy was left behind. After incredible difficulties Dr. Whitman at last succeeded in crossing the mountains, and by following the Santa Fe Trail he finally arrived in St. Louis. From there he went on to the East to report. The members of the mission board were displeased because Dr. Whitman had left his post without permission. He pleaded earnestly that eight years of labor might not be allowed to go for naught, and at last he persuaded the board to withdraw its previous order closing the mission. Thus the work of the missionaries was continued.

Dr. Whitman returns to Oregon. In the following May Dr. Whitman joined the immigration expedition of 1843, to the members of which he rendered valuable aid by suggestions and guidance. The Waiilatpu Mission became a principal stopping place for this and subsequent immigrations. As had Jason Lee before him, Dr. Whitman now realized that colonization had become his chief interest and concern. He desired the mission to become a center of interest to immigrants. In this way its influence would be increased, and the Indians would have before them good examples of the benefits of Christian civilization.

The Whitman Massacre. The natives, however, could not be unaware that each season saw hundreds of white men passing through their country. Presently the white man would need the land for settlement. Moreover, the white man brought diseases which killed off the Indians. While Dr. Whitman's remedies saved the whites, could it be possible, they thought, that he was poisoning them? On November 29, 1847, the natives whom Dr. Whitman had taught and befriended treacherously attacked the mission at Waiilatpu, tomahawked him, and then killed Mrs. Whitman and twelve others. The other white people at the mission were made captive. Later they were with difficulty rescued by Peter Skene Ogden, then chief factor of the Hudson's Bay Company at Fort Vancouver. The survivors were brought to the settlements of the Willamette Valley and the missions were abandoned. Out of this horrible massacre, as we shall see, grew the Cayuse War of 1848, which will be more fully described in a subsequent chapter.

Arrival of Roman Catholic missionaries. Most of the employees of the British fur company were Roman Catholics, and Dr. McLoughlin became one in 1842. As has been explained, the retired employees of the company settled on French Prairie, along the Willamette River, as early as 1829. There was also a considerable colony of settlers at Cowlitz Farm, most of whom subsequently removed to the Willamette Valley. As early as July, 1834, and again in February, 1835, the inhabitants of French Prairie had requested the Roman Catholic bishop at Red River, Canada, to send priests to them. At first there were no priests to be spared for Oregon, but subsequently two were found. These were Reverend Francis Norbert Blanchet, who was appointed vicar-general, and Reverend Modeste Demers. They left Canada in May, 1838, and arrived at Fort Vancouver in January, 1839. Father Demers proceeded at once to Nisqually and Cowlitz Farm, while Father Blanchet visited the various Indian tribes, saying mass, converting, and baptizing. The first Roman Catholic church in Oregon was a log one put up by the Canadians at St. Paul in 1836. On January 6, 1840, Father Blanchet celebrated the first mass in the Willamette Valley.

The first Roman Catholic schools. Reverend P. J. De Smet came out to the Flatheads in 1839, as that tribe had persisted in asking for religious teachers. In 1842 Fathers Langlois and Bolduc came from Europe and established a boy's school at St. Paul. Father De Smet went to Europe for reinforcements, and in 1844 he brought out priests and nuns from Belgium. The nuns opened St. Mary's convent at St. Paul.

Father Blanchet is made archbishop. In 1844 Father Blanchet was appointed archbishop and called to Quebec for ordination. That same year Father Demers became vicar-general. From Quebec the new archbishop went to Europe, and when he returned to Oregon in 1847 he brought further reinforcements for the missions. The archbishop's brother, Reverend A. M. A. Blanchet, was ordained bishop of Walla Walla. Father Demers later became bishop of Vancouver Island. With Reverend J. B. A. Brouillet, vicar-general, he went to Fort Walla Walla in September, 1847, to work among the Indians around the Hudson's Bay Company's fort. He was there when the Whitman Massacre occurred in November. Father Brouillet wrote an account of the affair. The briefs, or church orders, which established an ecclesiastical province having the three bishoprics of Oregon City, Walla Walla, and Vancouver Island, were dated July 24, 1846. This completed the organization of the Roman Catholic Church in the Oregon Country.

The missions of the Roman Catholic church have had a history somewhat like those of other churches. They had periods of rising success and of decline, as did the others. Like the Methodist and Presbyterian missionaries, the early Roman Catholic fathers soon turned their attention to ministering to the religious needs of the growing Catholic population.

ADDITIONAL READINGS

Atwood, Albert. *The Conquerors.* (Jason Lee.)
Bashford, J. W. *The Oregon Missions.*
Carey, C. H. *History of Oregon.* Chaps. 25, 26, and 27.
Chapman, C. H. *The Story of Oregon,* pp. 64-87; 99-107.

HORNER, J. B. *Oregon: Her History, Her Great Men, Her Literature,* pp. 67-80.
JOHNSON, S. V. *A Short History of Oregon,* pp. 194-212.
JUDSON, KATHERINE B. *Early Days in Old Oregon,* pp. 113-126.
O'HARA, E. V. *Catholic History of Oregon.*
SCHAFER, J. *History of the Pacific Northwest.* Chaps. 8 and 9.

QUESTIONS

1. Give in brief the story which accounts for the coming of the missionaries.
2. Why did Jason Lee not make a missionary settlement among the Flathead Indians?
3. Why was the site on Mission Bottom chosen?
4. What success did the missionaries have in converting the Indians?
5. What help was asked from the government at Washington?
6. Tell about the *Lausanne* party.
7. How many branch missions were established in 1840?
8. What provisions were made for schools in connection with missions?
9. Where were the Presbyterian missions located?
10. How did the work of the Presbyterian missions resemble that of the Methodists? How did it differ?
11. Give the causes for the Whitman Massacre. What were its immediate effects?
12. Why did the Roman Catholic missionaries come to Oregon?
13. What part of the population was Roman Catholic?
14. Why was farming necessary to the success of the Whitman missions?

MAP WORK

Locate the region originally occupied by the Flathead Indians.

CHAPTER XI

MAKING A GOVERNMENT FOR OREGON

AS we have learned, most of the white people who lived in the Oregon Country some ninety years ago were settled on farms in the valley of the Willamette River. The farms lay on both sides of the river, extending from the falls at Oregon City to the Methodist mission located about ten miles below where Salem now stands. The Hudson's Bay Company had its trading posts scattered over the territory. At those its traders were stationed the whole year round. It also had a large central post consisting of farms, factory, and flour mills, and employing hundreds of people. That post was located at Fort Vancouver. Too, the Company owned farms on Puget Sound, and along the Cowlitz River north of the Columbia. Besides, there was the Methodist mission station at The Dalles, and the other missions on the upper Columbia River directed by Dr. Whitman.

The French-Canadians in early Oregon. There were three classes of people living in the Willamette Valley at that time. The first to come in had been the French-Canadians. Those had served the Hudson's Bay Company as boatmen on the rivers and as helpers in the work of gathering furs. As they grew old, or as the terms of years for which they had enlisted with the Company expired, they had settled on the Willamette River

instead of returning to Canada. The region where they settled came to be known as French Prairie. Coming first, they had been able to choose the best land. They had found a prairie which was without trees and which needed no clearing. All that they had to do was to plow the soil and plant their seed. The site of their settlement may be located by finding on a map the towns of

THE WILLAMETTE VALLEY AS IT IS TODAY

St. Paul, St. Joseph, Champoeg, and Butteville. There all the French-Canadians lived close together, and there, in 1836, they erected a church at St. Paul.

The men had taken Indian women for wives, and their families of half-breed children were usually large. Travelers who visited those people in 1841 estimated the number of men at about sixty, and the total of men, women, and children at about three hundred fifty. In 1838 a Roman Catholic priest, Father Blanchet, had come to re-

side among them, and in 1842 two other priests arrived from Canada to look after the people's religious needs. The number of French-Canadian settlers was further increased in 1842 by the coming of some twenty families made up of English and French half-breed Indians and French-Canadians. Those came out from Canada in 1841, remained a year on the farms of the Hudson's Bay Company, and then removed to French Prairie. By that addition the number of the Canadian farmers was increased to eighty-three.

The missionaries and the "Mountain Men." A second class of settlers were the Methodist missionaries, the employees attached to the missions, and their families. Of those, besides the women and children, there were about twenty.

A third class of early settlers formed an independent group. Some of those had come from the Rocky Mountain region, where they had been trappers and hunters, to settle down to a more peaceful life in the Willamette Valley. Others had come to Oregon by way of California. Some were Americans, others of English birth. There were about thirty-five or forty of those men, many of them with Indian wives. People who visited the Willamette Valley settlements at that time estimated the number of Americans, counting women and children, at a hundred fifty. Thus, all told, there were some five hundred people, men, women, and children, in this region in 1840. The number of white heads of families was estimated at one hundred twenty-six, divided almost equally between Americans and French-Canadians. Thus every year greater numbers became engaged in agriculture.

Early Oregon had no government. Now those people had no government. That is, there were no officers to maintain order, no laws to which obedience was required. This lack of government was due to the fact that the title to the Oregon Country was in dispute between Great Britain and the United States. Unable to decide their boundary dispute, the two nations had agreed, in 1818, that both subjects of Great Britain and Americans were to have equal rights in the disputed territory. The citizens of either country might trade or settle within it as they pleased. This agreement prevented either Great Britain or the United States from extending its own government over Oregon. Neither nation could make laws for the inhabitants, appoint a governor for the region, or send soldiers to protect the settlers.

Early Oregon needed no government. In the early years of settlement there had been little need for either rulers or laws. In the first place, because the officers of the Hudson's Bay Company exercised a close control over all their men, even over those who had at one time been company employees and who had later settled in the Willamette Valley. Dr. McLoughlin, as chief factor of the Company, was a sort of ruler over his people; he could even send them to Canada for punishment whenever they committed serious crimes. The men attached to the Methodist mission were in a similar way held closely together by their association in a common enterprise, and by their support from a common fund. They had solved their problem of government by selecting one of their number to act as a justice of the peace.

In the second place, the early settlers had little need

for rulers or laws because they were usually peaceful and law-abiding. Captain Charles Wilkes, of the American navy, who visited the Willamette Valley settlements in 1841, related in a book which he afterward published that there had been only two instances of any sort of crime being committed since the foundation of the settlement. Those were the theft of a horse, and a settler's theft of his neighbor's pigs by enticing them to his house and dropping them into his cellar. The man's guilt having been established by the discovery of bones about his house, he was forced by his neighbors to pay to the owner the value of the stolen pigs. As land was still plentiful, each man staked out a claim wherever he wished, without encroaching on the fields of another. An Englishman, Sir George Simpson, governor of the Hudson's Bay Company, who also visited the Oregon settlements in 1841, said in a letter which he wrote at the time: "This little community, considering the materials of which it is composed, is in a more tranquil state than might be expected, one and all being anxious to stand well in public opinion, so that few cases of outrage or atrocity have as yet occurred among them."

The United States is asked for protection. As their numbers increased, however, the settlers began to feel uneasy because of the lack of government. As early as 1838 some of them sent a petition to the Congress of the United States asking for protection. Yet, partly because Oregon seemed far away, and also because the treaty with England prevented the United States from establishing a government, the settlers' petition met with no response.

Reasons for wanting a government. In explaining the need for a government at that time, the people said that they were in danger of attack by surrounding Indian tribes, and that they needed some sort of military force to protect them against such a danger. A letter of the time expresses it thus: "We have been threatened

WILLAMETTE FALLS AT OREGON CITY

with Indian wars by three of the most formidable tribes west of the Rocky Mountains. When united and acting in concert, we are abundantly able to destroy all the Indians in the territory; still, without union among ourselves, they can easily destroy us." The settlers also felt the need of some sort of central power that could treat with the Indians and purchase from them the lands claimed by them but occupied by the whites.

Another reason given for wanting a government was the need of laws, courts, and officers to check crime and disorder and to punish evildoers. Laws were also needed to regulate business dealings, and to provide for the disposition of the property of those who died. The settlers also felt the need of some method, such as we now have in our use of deeds, for recording their land claims in order to prevent disputes among people who might claim the same piece of land.

Another reason given for setting up a government was that it would be a good advertisement for attracting settlers from the Eastern states. People would be more willing to come to Oregon if they knew that they could secure land and be protected in their lives and property. As more people came there would be a greater demand for land, and thus the property of those already there would increase in value.

Many of those most eager for a government were doubtless thinking of the opportunity to be elected to the offices, such as those of governor, judge, and sheriff. Making a living was a rather easy matter in Oregon at that time, so men found themselves with a great deal of leisure. A settler told Captain Wilkes that he needed to work only one month of the year in order to raise enough food for his family. In consequence, the men of the settlements delighted in the opportunity to come together and talk about making a government. Captain Wilkes said that he "found the people idle, fond of lounging, and quite alive on the subject of laws, courts, and magistrates, including governors and judges."

Some of the reasons that the settlers gave for needing

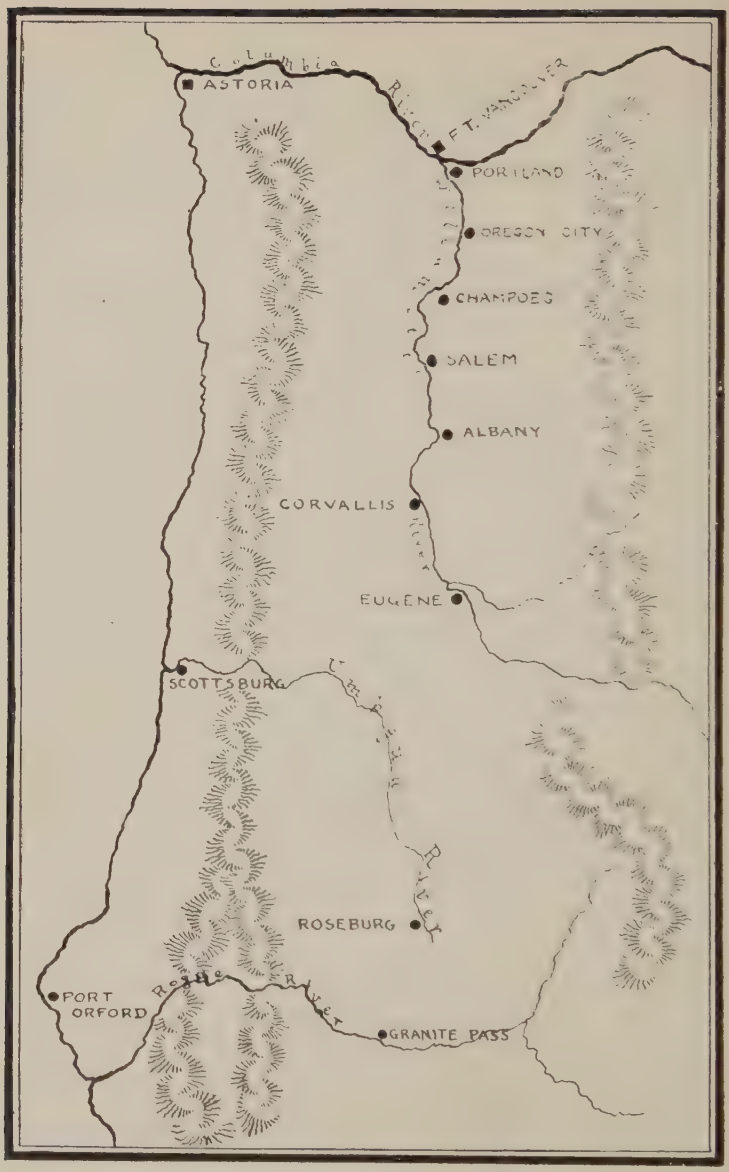
a government were somewhat exaggerated. The Indians of the Willamette Valley had really given little trouble; those elsewhere were held in restraint by the officers of the Hudson's Bay Company. Up to that time, as has already been noted, there had been little crime; such as had occurred had been taken care of without difficulty. Still, with the increasing population, it seemed desirable to have some method of punishing those who might commit crimes.

The people elect officers: 1841. The event that hastened the effort to form a government was the death, in February, 1841, of Ewing Young, a prosperous settler who had no known heir to inherit his property. Such a situation showed the need of a law by means of which someone could take over the farms, live stock, and other property of deceased persons. In other words, the settlers needed officers, and laws under which such officers could act for all the people. Whenever a person dies without heirs, either in the United States or in England, it is customary for his property to go to the government for the use of all the people. Meetings of all the settlers of the Willamette Valley were held on February seventeenth and eighteenth, at which a supreme judge, Dr. Ira Babcock, was chosen and given probate authority, that is, the authority to manage and dispose of the property of those who die. A sheriff and three constables were also elected, and a committee was appointed to propose a constitution at a later meeting.

The committee sought the advice of Captain Charles Wilkes, of the American navy, who was visiting Oregon at that time, and of Dr. John McLoughlin, chief factor of

the Hudson's Bay Company. Both men advised against the formation of a government because they did not believe there was any need for one at that time. Consequently, in 1841, the most that was secured in the way of a government was a few officers. Aside from looking after the estate of Ewing Young, those officers had little to do. Young's property was found to be worth more than three thousand dollars, so the money that came from its sale was turned over to the government which was formed in 1843. A part of the money was used to build the first public jail in Oregon. Some years later a reputed son of Ewing Young appeared in Oregon to claim his father's property. He was finally paid more than five thousand dollars, that being the amount which the government had received, together with the interest.

Oregon's population increases. During 1841 the population of the Willamette Valley settlements was increased by twenty-four Americans, men, women, and children, who came overland from Missouri. Next year some twenty Canadian families arrived. That was also the year when the first large American immigration reached Oregon. The government of the United States heeded the settlers' request for protection to the extent of appointing an Indian agent to reside among them. The Indian agent, more properly a sub-agent, was Dr. Elijah White, who for a few years had been associated with the Methodist missions. On returning to Oregon in 1842 Dr. White brought out a party of more than a hundred people, fifty of whom were men over eighteen years of age. This appointment of an Indian agent seemed to meet the desire of the settlers for some person of authority to



THE SETTLEMENTS OF WESTERN OREGON

treat with the Indians and exercise a certain amount of control over them.

Dr. White expected the people of Oregon territory to accept him as their governor as well as their Indian agent. The settlers were unwilling to do that, however, and they continued to hold meetings during 1842 for the purpose of discussing the formation of a government. At those meetings, the Canadians, acting on the advice of Dr. McLoughlin, voted against such proposals and so defeated all efforts to set up a government.

The "Wolf Meetings." In the next year, 1843, a temporary government was at last established. Those who desired a government sought at first to disguise their true intentions by holding meetings to consider ways of protecting their herds against the attacks of wild animals. The French-Canadians attended those "Wolf Meetings," as such came to be called, but they were not yet ready to join with the other settlers in setting up a government.

At the second of the "Wolf Meetings," which was held in March, the people agreed to raise money by popular subscription for the purpose of paying bounties for the killing of wild animals. A bounty of fifty cents was to be paid for killing a small wolf, three dollars for a large wolf, a dollar and a half for a lynx, two dollars for a bear, and five dollars for a panther. By means of that arrangement the people obtained government for a single limited object.

To carry out the plan of getting rid of the wild animals that preyed upon their flocks, the settlers needed officers to collect and pay out money, and rules, or a law, to explain how the bounties were to be paid. Not satisfied

with such a limited government, at the March meeting the people also selected a committee of twelve men to propose a plan for a more complete government. The plan was to be presented and discussed by the citizens at another meeting to be called later.

The call for a meeting at Champoeg. The Committee of Twelve sent out a call for the settlers to meet on May 2, 1843, to consider the establishment of a government for themselves. The place of meeting was to be Champoeg, in the French Prairie region, a site centrally located for all the settlements. On the bank of the Willamette River at that point the Hudson's Bay Company had a warehouse for storing grain. In that building the settlers assembled. In the secretary's minutes made at the time, we find the gathering described as "a public meeting of the inhabitants of the Wallamet settlements, for the purpose of taking steps to organize themselves into a civil community, and to provide themselves with the protection secured by the enforcement of law and order." The French-Canadians came, in order to make a last effort to defeat this project. Their opposition needs some explanation.

Dr. McLoughlin opposes the government. Many of the Americans who were trying to establish a government were hostile to the Hudson's Bay Company. According to the views of those men the Company seemed to exercise too great power over the life of the people. It bought their surplus grain at a price fixed by itself; its mills ground their wheat and made their lumber; its stores supplied the settlers with needed goods, such as clothing and shoes. Americans who sought to set up

rival stores or mills found it difficult to compete with the Company's enterprises. Some of the settlers did not appreciate all that the Company had done for them. Some resented its presence in Oregon and believed that the United States should deliver the colony from the Company's control.

Accordingly, in March, 1843, a petition signed by sixty-five Americans was sent to Congress. In that they explained their dependence upon the Company and they set forth their grievances against it.

The same men who were active in criticising the Hudson's Bay Company were the leaders in the movement for a government. Naturally, Dr. McLoughlin feared that such a government would be unfriendly to his company, and so used his influence to prevent its establishment. As he says in a letter which he wrote at the time, he feared "serious difficulties, for if these people enter on the exercise of self-government they will unquestionably attempt to assume authority over all the inhabitants of the district, British as well as foreign." Feeling thus, he urged the Canadians to appear in force at the May meeting and defeat the proposal for a government.

The meeting of May 2, 1843. There is only one report of this meeting of May second which was written at the time. It has come down to us in the minutes of the secretary. This report says that when the chairman of the meeting put the motion to approve the proposal to establish a government, it was defeated.

Presumably, the first method of voting was by calling for the ayes and noes. Then it was suggested that the voters divide, those favoring a government to form on

the right, those opposing, on the left. By this means it was determined that "a great majority" favored the formation of a government. The greater part of the dissenters then withdrew.

This contemporary account does not seem to agree with the recollections of men who were present on the occasion and who recorded their views many years afterward. The first of those, written by W. H. Gray in 1866, tells the story thus: "After the proposal to divide and count had been approved, old Joe Meek, as he stepped out, sang out, 'Who's for a divide? All for the report of the committee and an organization, follow me!' George W. Le Breton and Gray passed the line and counted fifty-two Americans, and but fifty French and Hudson's Bay Company men. They announced the count: 'Fifty-two for, and fifty against.' 'Three cheers for our side!' sang out old Joe Meek." According to Gray's story, no Canadians are recorded as voting for a government.

Dr. Robert Newell, who was present and who voted in the affirmative, writing in the same year, 1866, says that "the lines were formed in the open air with much pulling and hauling and sharp words. It took about half an hour to count the vote, and the motion to organize prevailed by five votes; but had the Frenchmen opposed the motion, as W. H. Gray says they did, it would have been lost." Dr. Newell then goes on to give the names of five Canadians who voted with the Americans.

In addition to the above accounts, we have the story as told by F. X. Mathieu some thirty years after the May meeting. He contends that he and Lucier, both French-Canadians, voted for the organization of a government.

It is difficult to understand why the vote should have been so close, since by May, 1843, there were more than a hundred American men in the Willamette Valley colony who might have been present and who could have outvoted the opposition.

Formation of a Provisional Government. After the count had been made, and those in opposition had withdrawn, those who were left, without waiting to adopt a constitution, that is, a definite plan of government, proceeded to make twenty-five offices and to elect as many of their number to fill them. This indicates that to the majority of the men the making of offices seemed the most important function of a government.

The offices provided for were a supreme judge; a recorder, whose chief duty was to keep a record of land claims; a sheriff, for which position Joseph Meek was selected; a treasurer; four justices of the peace; four constables; and a legislative committee of nine men. Those made up the civil offices. In addition, military officers, consisting of a major and three captains, were chosen. Two French-Canadians were among those elected to office. The legislative committee was instructed to report a plan of government at another meeting to be held on July fifth, following. The meeting was held on that date and a form of government and needed laws were adopted.

The government set up was described as temporary, or provisional, and as intended to last until such time as the United States extended its control over the territory. Because of the rivalries of different men who coveted the position, and the ill-feeling that might have arisen if any

one man should have been selected as governor, a committee of three men was chosen to stand at the head of the government.

Raising money for the government. As a government set up in this way, without the consent of all the people, seemed too weak to impose taxes, the plan of voluntary contributions, such as had been used to secure the bounty money, was resorted to as a means to provide for the necessary expenses of government. A subscription paper was circulated, and each man promised to pay such an amount as he felt able to contribute. Slavery was forbidden. The territory was divided into four districts or counties. The officers were to be elected annually. A land law permitted each settler to hold a claim not larger than six hundred forty acres, and required him to file a description of it with the recorder. Besides, he had to reside upon the land and make improvements such as buildings and fences. This law satisfied one of the principal desires for a government — to prevent disputes among persons claiming the same land.

How the Provisional Government worked. No one who did not willingly recognize this government and submit to its control belonged to it. This was its main weakness, for the French-Canadians and the people connected with the Hudson's Bay Company had no part in making it, and were not, therefore, a part of it. Even those who had consented to its formation seem to have not always taken it seriously. The story of a carpenter, named Dawson, illustrates this.

Dawson had got into a fight and made a disturbance. When Sheriff Meek went to arrest him in the name of

the new government, "his scorn and defiance manifested itself by an attempt to wield ax and jack plane, the tools of his trade, as weapons of defense. Meek's superior strength and skill at last convinced Dawson that resistance was useless, and he began to realize that there actually was a government, whereupon he declared that, as he had to submit, every other man must also."

Bringing outsiders into the government. In the fall of 1843 the largest immigration of Americans thus far, between seven and eight hundred people, reached Oregon. For a time it seemed doubtful if the new arrivals, so greatly outnumbering the settlers already in the territory, would recognize the government established by a part of the people in July, 1843. Some of the new men favored an independent republic for the reason "that if the country becomes a territory of the United States it will be so remote from the seat of government at Washington that it will be very difficult for us to get the laws made that we require." The newcomers were without hostility to the Canadians and wished them to be included in the government. The Canadians, too, impressed by so large an addition of Americans, now realized that it would be no longer possible to maintain peace and order without a government.

The Americans now called upon their French neighbors to join them in forming a government for all. New arrivals and old settlers combined in this effort to secure a union with the Canadians. At a meeting with the Americans in March, 1844, the Canadians announced their willingness to take part in the government. One of their priests drew up an address that was presented to

this meeting. In this they expressed some objections to the plan of government and the laws adopted by the Americans the previous year, but they said that they were now willing to become a part of that government and to obey its laws. From this time on they voted at elections, and by their taxes contributed to the support of the government.

The next year, 1845, Dr. John McLoughlin was persuaded to come into the Provisional Government and bring with him the people attached to his Company. Then the new government was extended to include the region north of the Columbia River. Two counties were carved out of that region. The southern one was named Vancouver, the northern one, Lewis.

The Provisional Government: 1844-1845. The government was greatly strengthened by the addition of the Canadians and Hudson's Bay Company people, for those now paid taxes toward its support. During the first year only about eighty dollars was raised by the method of voluntary contribution, although the total expense of government amounted to almost a thousand dollars. Consequently the plan of voluntary gifts was now given up and an effort was made to raise money by taxation. By the end of 1844 somewhat more than three hundred dollars had been collected through taxation. As a means of encouraging the payments of taxes, the revenue law provided that "any person refusing to pay a tax shall have no benefit of the laws of Oregon and shall be disqualified from voting at any election." The Hudson's Bay Company agreed to pay a tax on all sales of goods made to settlers. The sum contributed by the

Company in 1845 amounted to more than two hundred twenty-five dollars, which was more than half the total amount of money raised from other sources.

Another important change made in the government in 1845 was the election of a governor in place of a committee of three. The first governor was George Abernethy. The people continued to elect him governor during the whole period of the Provisional Government.

Laws passed by the Provisional Government. Besides prohibiting slavery in the Oregon Country, the Provisional Government also passed a law excluding free negroes. The sale and manufacture of intoxicating liquors was also prohibited. A postmaster-general was appointed, and mail routes carrying a weekly mail service were established. The first of those routes was by water from Oregon City to Fort Vancouver. On the second route, the mail was sent by horseback from Oregon City up the western side of the Willamette River. The return trip was made down the eastern side of the river, thus touching all the settlements along the way. Oregon City was made the capital during those early years.

The Provisional Government lasted from its establishment in 1843 until it gave place to the territorial government provided by an act of Congress. Though this act was passed in 1848, the governor appointed by the President did not reach Oregon until March, 1849. The Provisional Government actually served until that date. In practice the Provisional Government set up by the people of the Willamette Valley settlements proved to be most successful. It well served the ends which the people expected of it.

ADDITIONAL READINGS

CAREY, C. H. *History of Oregon,* Chaps. 28 and 29.
CHAPMAN, C. H. *The Story of Oregon,* pp. 88-98; 108-112; 121-125.
JOHNSON, S. V. *A Short History of Oregon,* pp. 213-231.
SCHAFER, JOSEPH. *History of the Pacific Northwest,* pp. 157-172.

QUESTIONS

1. Why did the people not feel the need of a government during the first years of settlement?
2. What led them to desire a government?
3. Why did the French-Canadians hold aloof and refuse to join with the Americans? When and why did they later consent to become a part of the government?
4. How much of a government did the people receive in 1841?
5. For what kinds of wild animals does the government now pay bounties? How would you secure a bounty for killing such an animal?
6. Tell in your own words what happened on May 2, 1843.
7. What methods were adopted for raising money to support the Provisional Government? Why did the Provisional Government seem so poor at the time?
8. Why did some Americans wish the Hudson's Bay Company people to become a part of the Provisional Government?

CHAPTER XII

THE AMERICAN OCCUPATION OF OREGON

AFTER the purchase of Louisiana Territory in 1803, the tide of American expansion began definitely to flow toward the West. The first to find the way were the discoverers and explorers. Those were presently followed by the traders and trappers. Travelers found their way to the West and upon their return they told wonderful tales of the far places. The next wave of population brought the missionaries; those showed the possibility of settlement, and, following them, the pioneers flocked to Oregon in ever-increasing numbers.

Some early American travelers. In 1829 the wanderings of the heroic young Jedediah S. Smith brought him to Oregon by way of the Great Salt Lake and California. From there he later carried a new interest and knowledge to the East.

Captain B. L. E. Bonneville, soldier, trader, and explorer, reached Fort Walla Walla of the Hudson's Bay Company in 1834. His attempt to carry on an independent fur trade in the Company's territory wholly failed, but the publication of his *Adventures,* by Washington Irving, excited keen interest and delight.

From 1832 to 1834, Nathaniel J. Wyeth made two attempts to trade along the Columbia River. With Wyeth's second expedition came Jason Lee to found the Methodist

mission. The next year saw the arrival in Oregon of Reverend Samuel Parker, a Presbyterian missionary, whose published *Tour,* an account of his travels in the Oregon Country, materially added to the nation's knowledge of the Far West. During the next year Parker was followed by Dr. Whitman and H. H. Spalding.

As early as 1815, Hall Jackson Kelley, of Boston, had been gathering information about Oregon. That was published in many books and pamphlets and so served to stir up much interest in the Oregon Country. In October, 1834, Kelley arrived at Fort Vancouver in company with Ewing Young. Early the next year he explored the country, and after his return to Boston he continued to write about Oregon until his death in 1868. He is one of the fathers of Oregon.

President Andrew Jackson, desiring to know more about Oregon, sent Lieutenant W. A. Slacum on a visit to the region in 1836. Lieutenant Slacum's report gave the United States government much additional information that could be used officially.

As a result of the missionary influence of Jason Lee, Thomas J. Farnham came out in 1839 with his famous "Peoria Party." The members of that expedition carefully examined the country, and the resulting book which Farnham wrote, his *Travels,* contributed much to the rapid spread of the "Oregon fever."

Next year, 1840, the *Lausanne* reinforcement of the Methodist missions increased the American population in Oregon. Captain Charles Wilkes, of the American navy, was in the region in 1841. His report included valuable descriptions of the Willamette Valley and its un-

touched resources. In that year a party of twenty-four immigrants, who had traveled overland, arrived in Oregon and joined the growing colony in the Willamette Valley.

Because of this ever-increasing interest in Oregon and the continuous immigration into the region, the government at Washington was content to let matters take their course, satisfied that the question of our title to the Oregon Country would eventually solve itself.

The immigration of 1842. As has been explained, Dr. Elijah White, of the Methodist mission, owing to a dispute with Jason Lee, resigned in the summer of 1840 and returned home in the ship *Lausanne*. Meantime, Lee's letter of 1839, to Caleb Cushing, was receiving favorable consideration, but the United States government could do nothing openly without violating the joint-occupation treaty of 1827 which had been made between this country and England. Dr. White was in Washington, D. C., with letters to President John Tyler, to Daniel Webster, who was secretary of state, and to others. The government decided to send Dr. White to Oregon as "sub-Indian Agent," since that much could be done without offending the letter or spirit of the treaty with England. The President, having given the doctor his commission, ordered him to depart at once for Oregon.

Dr. White gathers the company of 1842. Leaving his home in Lansing, New York, Dr. White started west, lecturing about Oregon on the way. He advertised in the newspapers for settlers to go with him. After reaching St. Louis, interest grew rapidly. Numbers of people from Jackson and Platte counties, Missouri, decided to

join him. The little company assembled at Elm Grove, Missouri, early in May. There were a hundred twelve of them in all. Of those, fifty-two were grown men, able to carry a rifle and stand guard at night. Eighteen large Pennsylvania wagons and a lengthy procession of cattle, horses, and pack mules made up the train which departed for the long journey on May 16, 1842. The good doctor's

From an Old Print

CROSSING THE BLUE MOUNTAINS IN 1843

heart almost failed him when he realized the heavy task he had taken upon himself. He had agreed to take whole families to an unknown land, through a hostile region two thousand miles in width, where danger of wild beasts and savage Indians lurked on every side.

The Oregon Trail. In every age and country from the earliest times men have moved about from place to place. In all the movements of history there is scarcely

one more famous or important than that in which thousands of Americans came overland to Oregon by the two-thousand-mile-long Oregon Trail.

The Oregon Trail started from Independence, Missouri, and led westward across the present state of Kansas, passing the present site of the city of Topeka. There it turned northwestward and followed several rivers, notably the Big Blue River, nearly to its source in the present state of Nebraska. Presently the trail reached the Platte River, at a place called Grand Island. Through the land of the Pawnee Indians it stretched along over the prairies of western Nebraska, past Chimney Rock to Scotts Bluff in the Nebraska county of that name. There the trail entered Wyoming and proceeded to Fort Laramie. Westward in Wyoming it crossed the counties of Laramie, Converse, Fremont, Sweetwater, and Uinta. In the then wild region the wagon trains forded many streams, among them Horseshoe Creek, Big Timber Creek, Deer Creek, Smiths Fork, Sweetwater, Big Sandy, and Little Sandy. At Pacific Springs, now called Pacific, in Fremont County, Wyoming, the immigrants first entered Oregon, which in pioneer times stretched from the Pacific Ocean to the summit of the Rocky Mountains.

The Oregon Trail across Idaho. Two or three days after crossing Bear River, the Oregon Trail reached the famous Soda Springs, in what is now Bannock County, Idaho. It was usually about the middle of July when the ox teams arrived there. Through Bannock County to Oneida County, the wagons were hauled across many streams and around many high mountains. The

road to Oregon now led along the Snake River past Fort Hall to the American Falls of the Snake River. Many tributaries of this stream were crossed, among them Levy Creek and Cajeux Creek, in what is now Cassia County. The Boise River was reached in Elmore County, then followed and crossed in Ada County. Presently the Snake River was again crossed and then the trail was in Oregon as we now know it.

The trail from Snake River to the Willamette. Usually the month of August had nearly passed by the time the tired travelers reached the Malheur River. After crossing Birch Creek the immigrants soon came to Burnt River, in the present Baker County. Along Powder River the trail went over the mountains to Grande Ronde, in Union County, and from Grande Ronde the road led to the Umatilla River. Then on westward to Willow Creek, in Morrow County, and there the long trail passed a favorite camping place. The swift Deschutes River had to be forded.

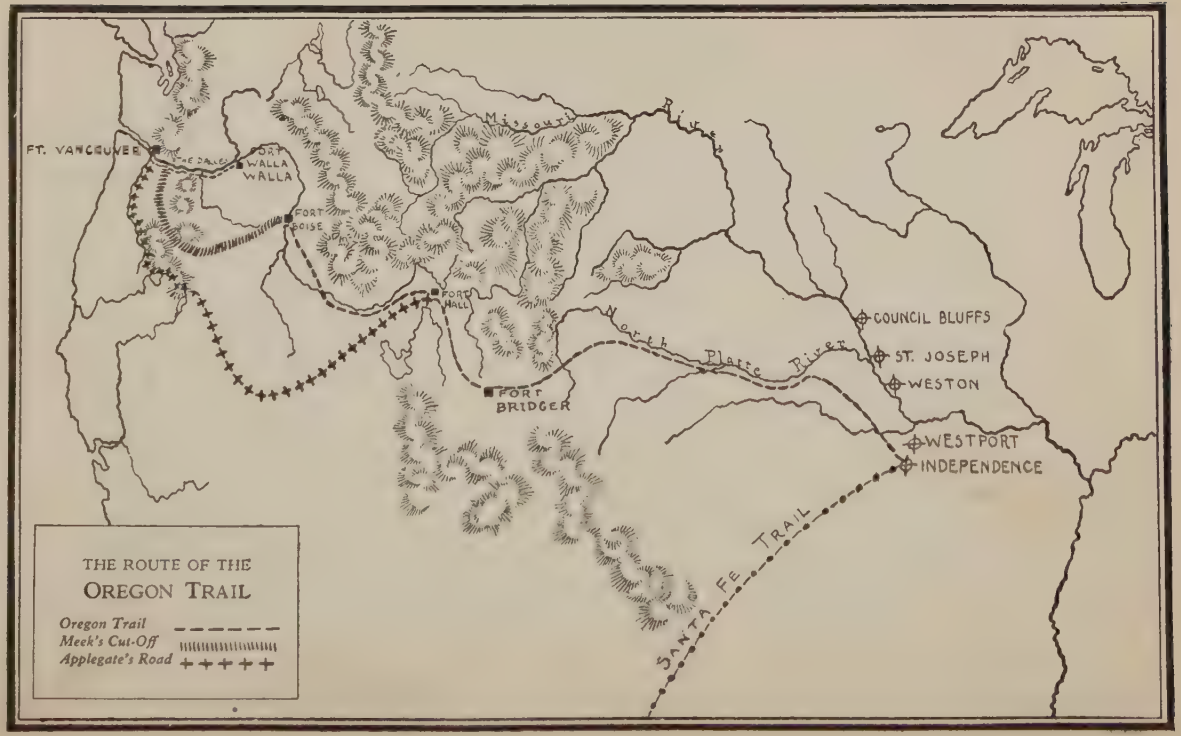
The route of the Barlow Road. After crossing the Snake River some of the early immigrants to Oregon kept on northward and came down the Columbia River by way of Whitman's mission at Fort Walla Walla. Later the wagon trains passed to the south of Whitman's mission and reached The Dalles. There boats were taken down the Columbia River to the Willamette. In 1845, Samuel K. Barlow, an immigrant of that year, found a better road south of the Columbia River. That road, which led around the foot of Mount Hood, later became a favored route of immigrants and the traveled road from eastern Oregon to the Willamette Valley.

Meek's Cut-off and the southern route. Although great numbers of immigrants each year went to Oregon along the routes already described, men were constantly seeking shorter roads to the Willamette Valley. When southern Oregon began to be settled, the long journey from Oregon City southward could be shortened by bringing the wagons directly across the country from the Malheur crossing of the Snake River. In 1845 Stephen Meek attempted to bring in an immigrant train by a road leading across a sandy desert country. Unable to find the way, or to secure wood and water, the party had to endure great hardships. Cattle starved to death, and continued hunger drove many settlers almost insane. Finally the Columbia River was reached. Meek's ill-chosen route was never used again.

MARKER USED BY THE OLD OREGON TRAIL ASSOCIATION

To the south Jesse Applegate and others looked for a good direct road to southern Oregon. They discovered such a route, but as it led through the country of the warlike Klamath and Modoc Indians, the trails down the Columbia River and over the Barlow Road continued to be most traveled. Properly speaking, Oregon City was the end of the Oregon Trail. From that point settlers and wagon trains dispersed in search of land and homes.

Methods of travel in 1842. Since the immigration of 1842 was the first to cross the plains, some plan had to


FT. VANCOUVER
COLUMBIA R.
WALLA WALLA
FORT BOISE
FORT HALL
FORT BRIDGER
Missouri River
North Platte River
COUNCIL BLUFFS
ST. JOSEPH
WESTON
WESTPORT
INDEPENDENCE
SANTA FE TRAIL
THE ROUTE OF THE
OREGON TRAIL
Oregon Trail
Meek's Cut-Off
Applegate's Road

be made to insure the safe arrival of immigrant parties in Oregon. With some slight exceptions, all immigrants who came after 1842 followed the plan used by Dr. White's company. When the Rocky Mountains were reached, White sent back to the settlements a letter which described the method of traveling that he and his followers had employed. Jesse Applegate wrote an interesting account of the journey of 1843, and Ralph C. Geer described incidents of the trip of 1847. Others also wrote their stories about crossing the continent.

Morning start of an immigrant train. At break of day the men on guard fired their guns to arouse the camp from its slumber. Camp fires were lighted and breakfast prepared. Cattle and horses were rounded up and hitched to the wagons, which took turns at leading, the one in front today going to the rear tomorrow. At about seven o'clock the wagons pulled out into line and the women and children climbed in. The guide mounted his horse and led the way, the long procession following. Some men usually went to hunt buffaloes, while others spent the day driving the loose cattle. The train stretched out to avoid the dust; the wagons did not get too far apart, however, for fear of Indian attacks. Finally the immigrant train reached some stream, whereupon the men gathered about to decide upon the best place for making a crossing. At such times the women and children alighted to walk along beside the wagon train or to gather the prairie flowers which grew everywhere.

The halt at noontime. The company's guide usually selected a likely location for the midday stop. It had to have a watering place for the cattle. Ox

teams were unyoked and the wagons were left standing in a long straight line. Sometimes there were disputes to be settled. When such was the case a council was held, each side told its story, and a decision was made. By that all had to abide. Sometimes the council made rules to govern camping or traveling. At one o'clock the signal

From an Old Print

CROSSING THE PLAINS EN ROUTE TO OREGON

to travel was again given and the train moved on. The hot summer sunshine poured down over all, the stifling dust covered wagons and occupants alike. Those who could, slept, while the clumsy wagons jolted along.

Camping for the night. As the sun sank lower in the west the guide began to look for a good camping place for the night. Early in the afternoon, usually at

about four or five o'clock, the day's journey came to an end. The wagons were drawn up close together to form a circular barricade. Within that fortress-like circle there was safety from the danger of Indians. The oxen were unhitched and driven out to grass. The men stood around in small groups, talking, and the women began the evening meal over a smudgy camp fire. Before supper was over it was usually dark. The men of the train were always grouped into companies for sentinel duty. Those on duty now went to their places, and the long watch began. From dusk to daylight the camp was securely guarded. As night came on, musical instruments were brought out, and soon soft melodies floated out across the prairies. Some danced to the tunes of the violin, while others about the bright camp fires sang the songs of their old homes in the East. Presently all grew quiet. All but the sentinels slept, for the rule was "early to bed and early to rise." Each day's journey was like that of every other day, yet new incidents were always occurring and interesting events broke the monotony of travel.

The great immigration of 1843. This immigration consisted of about a hundred families; it included a thousand people, a hundred twenty wagons, ninety-four oxen, and nearly eight hundred loose cattle. The people who composed it came principally from Missouri, Arkansas, Illinois, and New York. The expedition left Independence, Missouri, in May.

Peter H. Burnett, afterward the first governor of California, came to Oregon with this expedition. Besides Burnett, James W. Nesmith, Jesse Applegate, and many other men who were later to become prominent in Oregon

affairs and useful citizens of the state were members of the company. The arrival of those immigrants in the Willamette Valley more than doubled the population of that region.

Why the pioneers came to Oregon. What were the motives that caused men to make the long journey to Oregon? How did it happen that perils and hardships

From an Old Print

IMMIGRANTS AT THE END OF THE TRAIL

such as might appall the stoutest hearts were confronted not only by lone men but likewise by whole families?

As has already been explained, many travelers of the period from 1827 to 1845, upon returning to their homes in the East, printed narratives of their visits to the West. The missionaries and settlers in Oregon were constantly writing letters which found their way into the newspapers. Politicians like L. F. Linn and T. H. Benton kept the agitation alive in Congress. Returned voyagers had wondrous tales to unfold. As 1840 approached, meetings were held in many cities of the East urging

emigration to Oregon. In the printed reports of those meetings we find unexpected emphasis laid upon the patriotic motive. Unless emigrants went out to Oregon to hold it in the name of the United States, it was said, the region might pass into the possession of a hated foreign power. It may readily be observed that the inhabitants of the western states in 1840 remembered the War of 1812, with its accompanying Indian atrocities which were attributed to the instigations of British agents. None of these motives can be considered as paramount or controlling. As one writer said: "Oregon was before us in its future glory, and we grasped the prospect of its coming as the impulse of our scheme. We needed no speeches, no reports to awaken us. Oregon invited us."

Hard times and free land. Rather, it is to conditions in the Mississippi Valley, from 1837 to 1840 and after, to which we must look for an adequate explanation of the occupation of Oregon. The panic of 1837 was followed two years later by hard times and low prices all over the world. Men who had purchased land in the great valley could not pay for it. Farm products found no market. Daniel Waldo, who came to Oregon in 1843, tells us that prime bacon was cheaper than cordwood, and accordingly was used as fuel on the Mississippi steamboats. It was hard to get ahead in the world. Oregon, on the contrary, was depicted as a land where a few months' labor each year afforded a comfortable living to whomsoever was willing to put forth the little effort required. Moreover, it was expected that Congress would enact a law giving land to settlers. This law, so long advocated, was finally passed in 1850.

Later immigration into Oregon. In 1844 about fifteen hundred settlers were added to those already in Oregon. The companies of 1845 amounted to some three thousand persons; they doubled the white population of Oregon. Next year the number fell to seventeen hundred. The year 1847 saw five thousand arrivals in Oregon — men filled with the idea of founding a state upon the shore of the Pacific Ocean. The discovery of gold in California in 1848, and the immigration of that and succeeding years, drained much of the population of Oregon southward. Governor Lane's census, taken early in 1849, showed some nine thousand whites of all ages and sexes. By 1852, the men having returned from the California mines, and the settlement having progressed under the immigration of 1850-1851, the population of Oregon had grown to twenty thousand, scattered over the farms of the Willamette Valley.

ADDITIONAL READINGS

Bell, J. C. *Opening a Highway to the Pacific.*
Carey, C. H. *History of Oregon.* Chap. 30.
Chapman, C. H. *The Story of Oregon,* pp. 54-63.
Foote, Mary H. *A Picked Company.* (Fiction.)
Hough, Emerson. *The Covered Wagon.* (Fiction.) (Also the motion picture of the same title.)
Johnson, S. V. *A History of Oregon,* pp. 177-193; 213-220.
Schafer, Joseph. *History of the Pacific Northwest.* Chaps. 8, 9, and 10.

QUESTIONS

1. Why was Dr. White appointed "sub-Indian Agent"?
2. How was the company of 1842 assembled?

3. What was the usual method of traveling?
4. What dangers did the immigrants have to meet along the way?
5. What was the value of the Barlow Road?
6. In the books assigned for additional reading, or elsewhere, find further details to complete the description of a day on the Oregon Trail as given in this book.
7. Why did the pioneers come to Oregon? Make a list of the reasons. Interview any old settlers in your vicinity about this topic.
8. Does any part of the Oregon Trail pass through your vicinity?
9. In what years did the first settlers come to your neighborhood?
10. Make a list of the pioneers of your vicinity who arrived in Oregon before 1859. Give the date of their arrival in Oregon.

MAP WORK

Use red ink to trace the route of the Oregon Trail on a large wall map of the United States.

CHAPTER XIII

PIONEER LIFE IN OREGON

WHEN we sit in our comfortable, well-built homes, and read the evening newspaper by the glow of an electric lamp, or listen to the whirr of automobiles that pass along the hard-surfaced road, we can with difficulty realize how living conditions in Oregon have changed since the days of the early pioneers. Every minute we experience things never dreamed of by those immigrants who left their homes in the distant East and hazarded all to reach Oregon. In this chapter we shall learn something about the lives of those who dwelt in Oregon when the state was new.

The arrival in Oregon. The long ox trains which in April and May set out so hopefully from Independence or St. Joseph, Missouri, usually straggled into the Willamette Valley late in September or October, some six months afterward. By that time summer was gone and winter was near at hand. Few of those who came into this new country had friends to receive them or even definite destinations.

Immediately upon arrival, the head of the family went to look for suitable land on which to settle, for a home had to be made at once. The long journey left the cattle lean, hungry, and exhausted, the food supply consumed, all the money spent. It was necessary, therefore, to

find a location for the family at once, so that the father might work and thus provide food and clothing for all.

Taking up a claim to land. Land was plentiful, and almost any unoccupied tract might be settled. Men already located were anxious to have good neighbors near at hand, so as to break the dread monotony of isolation. Before the Donation Land Law was passed in 1850, there were no surveys of land in Oregon, and consequently each settler had to describe his land as best he could. This description he then filed in the office of the Recorder of the Provisional Government, at Oregon City. He was thus able to hold his land against others so long as his family resided upon it, or so long as he continued to improve it. After the Donation Land Law was passed, the government at Washington sent out a surveyor-general who surveyed the Willamette meridian and the base line. Those lines are still used as a basis for the description of all land in the states of Oregon and Washington. After the government survey had been made, whenever a settler located a claim, he and his neighbors sent for the surveyor-general to stake out the boundary lines of the claim taken by each. After the descriptions were filed in the United States Land Office, the government issued to the settlers deeds or patents to the land, if they had complied with all the other regulations in force at the time.

Building the first cabin. After the settler found a desirable tract of land, one of the first things he did was to build a cabin or dwelling of some other sort. Since those rude homes of early days have now disappeared, that boy or girl who has been privileged to see the log cabin home built by a pioneer is fortunate indeed.

The cabins were built of fir logs which varied from a few inches to more than a foot in diameter. The logs were laid up unhewn, or at most with only the bark removed, and so notched and overlapped at the corners of the building that they would not roll. For a roof, rafters of smaller logs or poles were laid up. Across those were placed roof boards, usually of split timber, to which were fastened the shingles, or "shakes," as they were generally

MODEL OF THE HOUSE BUILT BY WILLIAM JOHNSON IN 1842
The Original Stood on the Site of the City of Portland

called at that time. Few log cabins had a gable roof; instead, the roof usually sloped in only one direction. Many log cabins in Oregon were constructed without nails; wooden pegs were used to fasten the larger timbers together. Even the doors were swung on wooden hinges.

The walls of early cabins were neither papered nor plastered; moss or mud was used to fill the crevices between the logs and so keep out wind and rain. In early days the cabin had no stove; a fireplace or open hearth furnished light, heat, and a means of cooking.

Neighbors usually assembled to assist in erecting cabins, and especially to help with the logrolling necessary in handling the larger timbers which were used in the construction of barns. At those "raisings," as such gatherings were called, there was usually much merry-making as well as much work; the occasion was regarded as a sort of recreation.

The food of the pioneer. The first winter in Oregon found the pioneer family dependent upon a scanty supply of the simplest fare. Game was plentiful, but game alone hardly furnishes an adequate diet. Many a settler went to French Prairie and brought home a few bushels of dried peas for use in lieu of wheat. For although boiled wheat is a highly nutritious food, as daily fare it becomes exceedingly monotonous, for human beings require a variety of foods. Flour was often difficult to procure, and the early settlers in southern Oregon and in the Willamette Valley had to go to Champoeg or Oregon City for this staple food. At a later date, Levin English built a gristmill on Howell's Prairie, and in 1846 a mill for grinding wheat was erected on the Calapooia River above Brownsville. The demand for a more accessible supply of flour was followed by the erection of mills to supply the requirements.

Clearing the land. Hardly was the family safely housed for the winter season, and the wolf of threatened starvation driven from the single door of the cabin, when the settler began in earnest the task of clearing his land and making it ready for the plow. For the first field a tract of land without heavy timber was selected. On this the underbrush was "slashed," or chopped down, then

neatly piled in rows, and later, during the dry season, burned. Later the stumps and underground portions of trees and shrubs were grubbed out with mattock and axe and a liberal expenditure of manual labor.

If a tract containing heavy timber was to be cleared, the trees were first felled and the logs then burned. It is impossible to estimate the value of Oregon timber wantonly burned and destroyed in those early days as the easiest means of getting it off the land. In such cases, if the stumps were not too numerous or too close together, they were left in the ground. The settler preferred to plow and cultivate around them, season after season, rather than to expend the great amount of energy required to dig them out. Once the ground was sufficiently cleared it was necessary to break it, that is, to turn under the unplowed sod. For that work, large plows, sometimes drawn by several yokes of oxen, were frequently used.

THE PIONEER

Planting and cultivation. The ground was then ready for cultivation, for seeding, or for the planting of orchards. The early settlers in Oregon suffered from a lack of fruit. The little fruit that was brought into the

region in those days, and even the homegrown fruit which was first offered for sale, commanded fabulous prices. It was difficult, too, to procure fruit trees suitable for planting. In early days much of the fruit came from seedling trees and was consequently inferior in quality. Apples, plums, and cherries were the fruits chiefly grown at first, but the evergreen blackberry was introduced from the Hawaiian Islands in an early day.

So soon as crops were planted, fences had to be placed around them as a protection against the ravages of live stock. Deer, which were still to be found everywhere in the dense woods along the streams, seriously menaced the settlers' gardens. Their agility made it difficult to fence them out. Often, in the evening, after a day of arduous toil, the settler shouldered his Kentucky rifle and went afield to look for the deer that might consume his crops, and incidentally to procure fresh meat for his family. As the population of early Oregon came largely from the South, among the settlers hunting was an outlet for the racing and fox-hunting tendencies doubtless inherited from their ancestors, the early cavaliers.

Fences and livestock. The fences — sometimes called "worm" fences — used by the early settlers, were made of rails, long pieces of wood split from tree trunks. Lincoln made such rails in his youth, and because of his skill at the work he is sometimes referred to as the "Rail-splitter." The tall, slender, straight-grained Douglas fir trees were ideal for making rails, and just because of the suitability of that kind of timber almost all the fences of early Oregon were made of it.

Not only were the crops of the pioneer settlers in

danger of destruction by the deer and the farmer's own live stock, but there was a constant likelihood of their being destroyed by the wild hogs and the Spanish cattle that infested the region. The Spanish cattle were as difficult to approach as were the deer; they were hunted by the earliest settlers in much the same way that the wild deer themselves were hunted. The wild hogs lived in droves and made their nests in hollow logs and stumps or under the spreading branches of giant fir trees which sheltered them from the elements.

The pioneer housewife. Among the early pioneers the business of home-making was carried on from the first. The management of domestic matters fell to the care of the mother of the household. Except in the earliest times she did no spinning or weaving; instead, she purchased the rough cloth from which the family garments were made. She did the family cooking over an open fire which afforded both light and heat. She dipped tallow candles for family use until such time as oil lamps became available.

Inside the pioneer's cabin. The simple household furniture of the early pioneers was roughly constructed by the local cabinetmaker. Some of those craftsmen were very skillful, however. They have left many pieces of fine furniture which attest a high quality of workmanship, a certain degree of taste, and sometimes distinct artistic ability. At first, pictures were few; whatever of color and adornment the house possessed was usually due to the ingenuity of some member of the household or to that of some friend. Often a finely pieced quilt was displayed to feast the eye on a riot of

color and to recall a pleasant social hour. Decorated dishes and other attractive household utensils were displayed here and there about the room to ornament the otherwise bare and scantily furnished habitation.

The members of the family were always busy; each had some assigned task. Land had to be cleared and

THE CABIN OF A SETTLER ON A TIMBER CLAIM

crops planted and harvested, for those were days when the primeval forest had to be literally chopped out so that men might exist. So far as concerns art, the generations of men who do the pioneering on a great continent do not stand high in the scale of culture. But whatever may have been the shortcoming of the American pioneers in that respect, it was amply compensated by certain other qualities of equal or even greater worth.

Although many volumes of literature were never to be had, one book was always to be found. Within its covers those hardworn sons of toil, those drudging and lonely pioneer housewives, found guidance for each day's life, respite from every difficult labor, comfort for every grief. From sea to sea across this mighty continent, wherever the pioneer's cabin was to be found, the King James Bible always afforded solace to the weary-hearted and the heavy-laden. Throughout the weary miles of the Oregon Trail, and beside the nightly camp fires of the immigrants, God-fearing pioneers read their Bibles. As with some inner joy, the Bible made bright the drab habitations of the frontier. Within the Bible the early pioneers found not alone "the way unto salvation." There, too, they found models for the conduct of every-day life, examples of love and obedience and of respect for law and order. Constant reading of the Bible and a faithful following of its precepts produced a family type — the highest and most stable that civilization has ever known.

Roads and travel in early Oregon. Life on the frontier is always isolated. In the early days of Oregon history there were no roads worthy of the name. Except during the summer months the openings through the forests were impassable because of mud. In consequence, travel, except on horseback, was practically impossible. The roads taken by the early immigrants were of necessity laid through the foothills, because it was only in such regions that travelers could ford the streams.

One of the oldest roads was that which traversed the Willamette Valley southward from Oregon City. Along

it lay the towns of Silverton, Lebanon, and Brownsville, old settlements which had earlier been trading posts on the main road which led from the falls at Oregon City to the settlement of Jacob Spores on the upper Willamette River. As this highway lay on the edge of the Willamette Valley, it was possible for travelers to cross the rivers which flow down from the Cascade Range. About 1850 some of the streams were bridged, and throughout the fifties and early sixties the legislature passed many bills which provided for the construction of roads to connect the principal centers of population. Prior to 1848 there was no mail service south of Oregon City. The mail was very scanty before that date and in consequence it was carried by riders.

Harvest time in pioneer days. The dreary loneliness of the long winter nights was forgotten in the companionship of the harvest fields. The steady succession of winter's dark days, the incessant beating of the winter rain upon the house roof, the dismal sighing of the south wind among the tree tops, all that was followed by a sunshiny spring, and presently summer was come.

Then, while the keen scythe flashed back and forth in the sunshine, the wild grass along the swales was cut for hay. Green fields of grain turned to a rich golden hue and then to brown. Before the days of harvesting machines the cradle was used to cut the wheat and oats. The new-cut grain lay in long windrows. From such windrows the bundles were gathered and bound by hand. This primitive husbandry, which had its beginning along the Euphrates and the Nile, is as old as civilization it-

self. In early Oregon, however, it was presently succeeded by the first harvesting machines. Those cut the grain but men continued to bind the bundles by hand.

Harvesting was often made a gala time. The men of the neighborhood helped one another with the work. The bundles were hauled in from the fields and laboriously fed into separators driven by horsepower machines. Only a few hundred bushels could be threshed in a single day. When the threshers came, the housewife prepared for them the best meals within her skill. In this she was usually assisted by the women who lived in the vicinity. It was generally believed that the excellence of the food she prepared won recognition for her as a good wife and helpmate.

Before the days of the railroads grain was hauled by wagon to the nearest boat landing on the Willamette River, and sometimes to Oregon City, or even to Portland. There it was sold or exchanged for family necessities.

The first schools in Oregon. Hardly was the harvest over and the fall plowing done, before school opened. The pioneer era was the period of itinerant teachers, like Ichabod Crane, who is depicted in Washington Irving's charming story, *The Legend of Sleepy Hollow*. The teacher boarded among the families of the district. At first there was school for three months, or one quarter, as it was called. Before the school districts were organized, in 1854, tuition was charged; afterward the schools were free. The schoolhouses were usually built of logs, but sometimes an abandoned settler's cabin was put to use. There was usually a fireplace at one end of the

cabin, and a door at the opposite end. Those openings furnished the only light the pupils had. Often the gloom was rendered still more dense by the smoke from the fireplace. Poor as the schoolhouse was, its equipment was even poorer. It had neither charts nor maps, and, of course, libraries were unknown. Fortunately such schools have now almost disappeared.

Social life among the pioneers. In the pioneer days recreation and social life were entirely unorganized. Whatever recreation there was, appeared spontaneously. The usual holidays of the year, religious and political, were made the occasion for amusement and social gatherings. Aside from the festivals of Easter and Christmas, the church took little notice of the social side of life. Thanksgiving was hardly an occasion of joy, and Memorial Day was not yet observed. The Fourth of July, therefore, together with an occasional picnic, were the only opportunities for community gatherings of a recreational nature. Throughout the short school year spelling and singing schools were often held, and, if the competition were keen, those sometimes attracted rather widespread attention. Dances were given at times, but in a day when a majority of the people belonged to churches which forbade this amusement, that diversion was almost universally frowned upon.

Some excesses of pioneer days. The homely joys of pioneer days were often clouded by the evil effects of strong drink. After Oregon became a territory whisky was procurable by the gallon at almost any grocery store. Many men drank to excess. Gambling with cards was carried on openly in nearly every town. Ball games were

the first outdoor sport to make an appearance, and for a long time were the only one, aside from frequent summer excursions to the favorite swimming hole. Men and women, young and old, all indulged in riding. A handsome pony was the great pride of its owner. The abundance of excellent horses and the competition among men to own the finest horse in the neighborhood resulted in much horse-racing on which bets were laid. The churches of those times strongly disapproved of all such excesses, and finally their efforts to abolish the evils were fortunately decisive. In their youth and early manhood many of the men of our own day witnessed scenes of dissipation which, happily, the boys and girls of this generation will never see.

The early churches of Oregon. The churches of pioneer times had a great influence upon the population, since most of the people were members of some one of them. As the church in those early days was the only regular center of community life, all the social interests of the neighborhood centered about it. The American frontiersman has always possessed strong religious convictions. This has been due to the need of finding an outlet for the powerful emotions which characterize men who live under the stress of a hostile and dangerous environment. The first men who came to Oregon for purposes other than trade or business were the missionaries — men like Jason Lee, Marcus Whitman, and Father Blanchet. Those men established the Christian church in Oregon and laid the foundation for all further religious progress in the state. The story of their heroic work has already been related in this volume.

The pioneer circuit riders. Following the missionaries came another group of fearless workers for righteousness. Those were the circuit riders. Before the days of city churches with resident pastors, the circuit riders went up and down the Oregon Country, scores of miles from home, ministering to the spiritual needs of the people. In summer and in winter, in sunshine and in storm, they went their way from settlement to settlement, like the Disciples of old. When night overtook them, they sought the home of a worthy settler, usually one of their own sect or faith. They preached at farmhouses in regions where there were neither churches nor schoolhouses; frequently, during the harvest season, they held meetings in the fields. Their pay was scanty; often they received no compensation whatsoever. Through the weary hours they watched beside the sick bed of men who were strangers to them. They preached the funeral sermon for those whom death claimed. To comfort the sick and to succor the dying, their horses swam torrential rivers and plodded the interminable woods.

THE CIRCUIT RIDER

Those brave men are gone. Only their names remain,

carved on mossy stones that lie along highways of shiny asphalt. The finest of our ideals we owe to them. Whenever we speak of service to men as an ideal, we must remember that the early circuit riders lived devoted lives of service, self-sacrifice, and suffering such as the world has not seen since the first centuries of Christianity. They preached obedience to God, to parents, and to native land. These are the most desirable ends of life. In an age when the rude and primitive instincts of men had opportunity for full play, the circuit rider pleaded the cause of humble Christian virtues. To them Christianity was indeed a living faith, because its institutions are adapted to the needs of men.

ADDITIONAL READINGS

Applegate, Jesse. *Recollections of My Boyhood.*
Banks, Louis A. *Live Boys in Oregon.*
Carey, C. H. *History of Oregon.* Chap. 32.
Clark, S. A. *Pioneer Days of Oregon History.*
Geer, Theodore T. *Fifty Years in Oregon.*

QUESTIONS

1. How was land secured under the Donation Land Law?
2. Describe the building of a log cabin.
3. Describe the hardships of pioneer life.
4. Give an account of the life of some early pioneer preacher who lived in your community.
5. What crops were raised at first? Why?
6. What were some of the early difficulties of farming?
7. Describe the interior of a typical settler's cabin.
8. Describe one of the early schools.
9. Where were the first church buildings erected?
10. In what ways was the pioneer church of service to the community?

CHAPTER XIV

THE BOUNDARY DISPUTE

AS a result of voyages of discovery by sea, overland expeditions, and the establishment of trading posts along the Pacific coast, five nations came to have claims to Northwest America. Those were Spain, Russia, Great Britain, France, and the United States.

France never did have very much interest in the region, and when in 1803 she sold to the United States all the territory she possessed west of the Mississippi River, she gave up whatsoever title she may once have had.

Russia made good her claim to the most northerly part of the continent, and came into undisputed possession of the region known as Alaska.

Spain never manifested more than a temporary interest in Northwest America. She had little interest either in the fur trade or in the possession of the land. By a treaty with Great Britain in 1790 she recognized that British subjects had as much right in the region as had her own people, and in 1819, by another treaty, she surrendered to the United States her title to all the territory north of the forty-second parallel of latitude.

Great Britain, or rather, some British subjects connected with the Northwest Fur Company, had explored the region, established trading posts within it, and persuaded their government to insist on a claim to it.

The title of the United States came finally to rest upon the discovery of the Columbia River by Captain Robert Gray, upon the voyages of other American vessels along the Northwest Coast, upon the expedition of Lewis and Clark, and upon the occupation of Astoria by John Jacob Astor's Pacific Fur Company. After the treaty with Spain, just mentioned, the United States secured Spain's title, which was based upon the discovery of the coast by Spanish sailors. Thus, Russia, the United States, and Great Britain early became the three rivals for possession of the region which later came to be known as Oregon.

Joint occupation by Americans and British. In 1812 the United States and Great Britain went to war. During the war Astor's partners sold the property of the Pacific Fur Company to some British interests, the Northwest Fur Company, and withdrew from the Oregon Country. Then a British war vessel entered the Columbia River and took possession of Astoria. In the treaty made at the conclusion of hostilities, each nation agreed to restore all places captured from the other during the war. Thus it became necessary for Britain to restore Astoria to the United States, and that was done in 1818.

During the same year two treaties regarding boundaries were made between the United States and Great Britain. One of those fixed the boundary between the United States and Canada at the forty-ninth parallel of latitude, from the Lake of the Woods westward to the Rocky Mountains. The United States was willing to have this line extended on across the Oregon Coun-

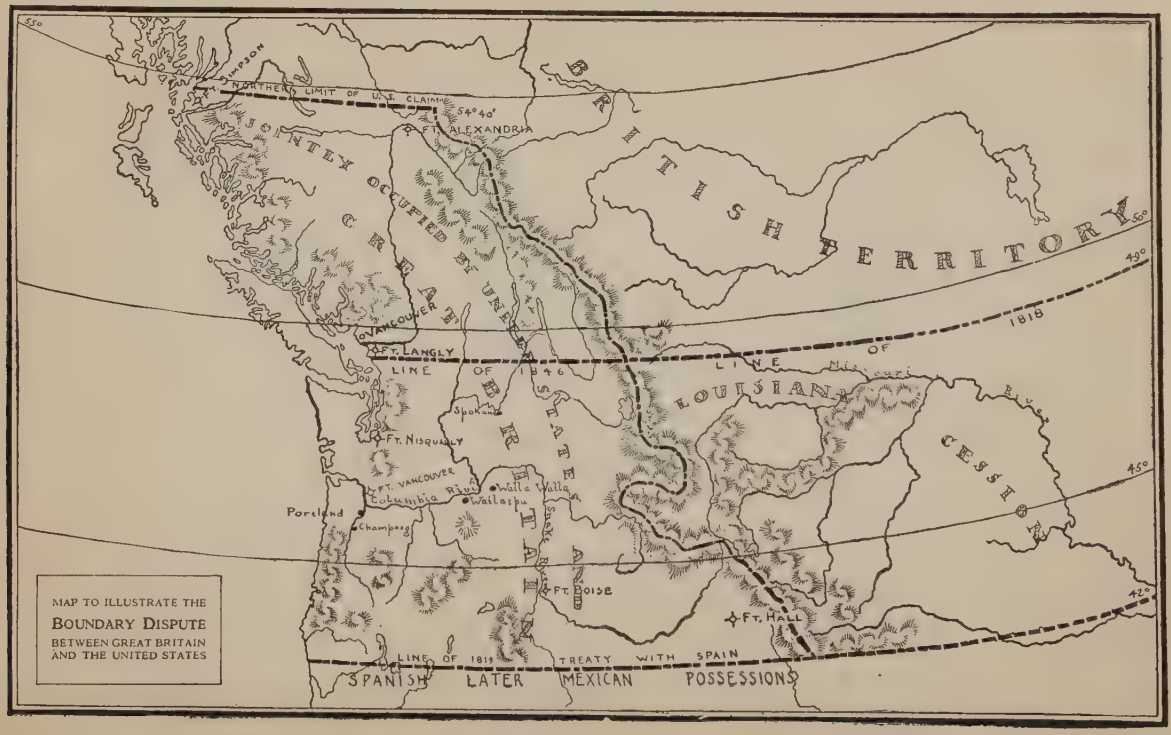
try to the Pacific Ocean, but to that proposal Great Britain would not consent. Doing so would have meant giving up a region very rich in fur-bearing animals, one throughout which the Northwest Fur Company had built its trading posts, and from which the Company was each year taking furs worth many thousands of dollars. The British desire was to hold this region as one vast game preserve.

At that time there was not an American settler in the Oregon Country. John Jacob Astor was urging the United States to retain the territory because he hoped to renew his own trading enterprises later. Astor never did resume operations, however, and several years passed before Americans again came to Oregon. Unable to agree on a boundary line for dividing their territories west of the Rocky Mountains, Great Britain and the United States then agreed that their citizens should jointly occupy the Oregon Country. That is, both British subjects and Americans were equally free to enter the region for purposes of trade and settlement. This was the second treaty made during the year 1818. It was to last for ten years. In 1827 it was renewed for another ten-year period, or until such time as either nation might wish to give it up.

Britain gains by joint occupation. At first greater gain came to the British than to the Americans by this arrangement for joint occupation, because for many years no American had any wish to settle in Oregon. Thus the fur companies were given an opportunity to carry on their enterprises unhindered. The Hudson's Bay Company was strong enough to keep out or to discour-

age all American competitors, and to enjoy a complete control over the fur trade of most of the territory for more than twenty years. In the long run, however, when the Americans wanted to come to Oregon to make homes, the treaty gave them that privilege. As matters turned out, few British subjects wished to settle in Oregon. Many hundreds of Americans, however, had entered the region by 1845. It is now not difficult to understand which of the two nations proposed to make the better use of the Oregon Country. The people of the United States sought to settle the region. The people of Great Britain had no greater interest in Oregon than to desire it to be kept for the use of the Hudson's Bay Company and to permit that company to hold it as a vast fur-bearing region.

How Oregon secured a southern boundary. Louisiana Territory, purchased by the United States from France in 1803, had no definite boundaries on all sides. The Mississippi River was its eastern boundary, the Gulf of Mexico its southern limit. On the north it was bounded by Canada, a British territory, on the west by the Rocky Mountains and the Spanish possessions. In 1819 the United States and Spain agreed on a boundary line between their lands. This line started at the mouth of the Sabine River, on the Gulf of Mexico, and went northward to Red River, then to the Arkansas River, then to the forty-second parallel of latitude and westward along that line to the Pacific Ocean. Spain gave up to the United States all claim to lands north and east of that boundary line. The Rocky Mountains made the eastern boundary of the Oregon Country, and the



MAP TO ILLUSTRATE THE
BOUNDARY DISPUTE
BETWEEN GREAT BRITAIN
AND THE UNITED STATES

forty-second parallel of latitude from those mountains to the Pacific Ocean became its southern boundary.

The northern boundary of Oregon. In 1821 Russia sent a note to the government of the United States announcing that the southern boundary of her American territory, Alaska, extended to the fifty-first parallel of latitude, and warning Americans and other foreigners not to fish, trade, or settle north of that line. The United States believed that Russia had no right to land lying so far south, and finally our government succeeded in persuading Russia to agree upon a boundary line lying nearly midway between the fifty-fourth and fifty-fifth parallels of latitude, or, to be exact, the line known as 54°40′, as a boundary between their respective territories along the Northwest Coast. This agreement was made in 1824. The next year Great Britain and Russia agreed upon the same line as the boundary between their claims in that region. The line which lay along the parallel of 54°40′ became the northern boundary of Oregon, although the region itself was claimed by both Great Britain and the United States.

Thus the Oregon Country came to extend from the Rocky Mountains on the east to the Pacific Ocean on the west. Its southern boundary lay at 42°, north latitude, its northern boundary at 54°40′, north latitude. Only Great Britain and the United States claimed this region after 1824. As we have seen, Spain and Russia had given up all claim to it.

The whole Oregon Country not in dispute. Although both Great Britain and the United States claimed the whole of the region from California to Alaska, as

a matter of fact neither expected to make good its title to the entire territory. Each nation knew that some boundary lying between parallels 42° and 54°40′ would have to be agreed upon. The United States contended for a boundary line lying along the forty-ninth parallel of latitude and extending westward from the Rocky Mountains to the Pacific Ocean. Great Britain, on the contrary, proposed that the forty-ninth parallel should be followed only from the Rocky Mountains westward to the Columbia River, and that the boundary line should then follow down that stream to the ocean. The territory about which the two nations were in dispute lay between the Columbia River and the Pacific Ocean; it included the western part of the present state of Washington. The two governments carried on correspondence about the Oregon boundary in the years from 1823 to 1828; in those communications they made the proposals just described. As the nations were unable to reach an agreement at that time, the treaty of joint occupation was renewed, and an article was added to the treaty by which the two nations agreed that it should last until such time as either wished to give it up.

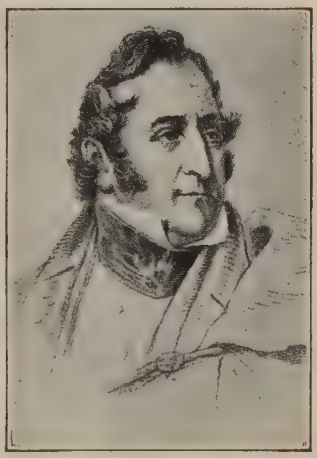
Dr. McLoughlin directs some settlers. When the Methodist missionaries and other Americans began to come to Oregon to settle, Dr. McLoughlin, acting for the interest of the Hudson's Bay Company, persuaded them to go into the Willamette Valley south of the Columbia River, since Great Britain hoped to make that stream the boundary line. Plowing, the planting of crops, the building of homes, the increase in population, the growth of towns — all those activities that accom-

pany the making of settlements — destroyed the value of the region as a fur-producing territory. Dr. McLoughlin was well aware that by confining settlement to one narrow section the remainder of the great wilderness would continue to yield an ample supply of pelts. So successful was the clever governor of the Hudson's Bay Company in directing Americans into the Willamette Valley, that few found their way elsewhere before the treaty of 1846 was concluded.

The American interest in Oregon. During the twenty-year period between 1820 and 1840, people in the eastern United States gradually became more and more interested in Oregon. As they became more interested they began to demand that the United States make good its title to the region. This increasing interest in the Oregon Country was due to the appearance of books, pamphlets, and letters which described it. A book giving the story of the Lewis and Clark Expedition, compiled from the journals which those men and others of the party had kept, was published in 1814. Even before that date, and also afterward, many other narratives of Lewis and Clark's famous exploration were printed. Irving's *Astoria,* and other books which gave accounts of Astor's enterprise, were also published during those years. Missionaries wrote letters which were printed in church papers; some missionaries returned to tell of the Oregon Country from pulpit and platform. Other missionaries wrote books that were widely read; among those was the narrative of Reverend Samuel Parker, the companion of Dr. Whitman. Fur traders and travelers who reached Oregon returned and told

stories of its many wonders. Some of those men also published books of narrative. At times their experiences were told for them in interesting story form by great writers, such as Washington Irving, in whose book, entitled *Captain Bonneville,* he relates the adventures of that traveler in the little known regions of the Far West.

Men who made Oregon better known. Several men, whose names are worthy of our remembrance, played an important part in advertising Oregon to the people of the Eastern states. One of those was Dr. John Floyd, of Virginia, a member of Congress who was farsighted enough to see the importance of the United States securing territory on the Pacific Ocean as a means of establishing a more direct trade with China and Japan. For several years, from 1820 to 1828, Dr. Floyd sought to arouse the United States Congress to do something for Oregon. He was the first man to propose that the region be organized as a territory of the United States, that it be given protection against the Indians, and that the land be opened for settlement. He was also the first to suggest that the region be given the name *Oregon.* Until Dr. Floyd's day the word *Oregon* had been used only as a name for the river which later came to be known as the *Columbia.* Floyd's efforts



THOMAS H. BENTON

availed little, however, except to keep alive some interest in the Oregon Country and in its possible advantages.

The activities of Hall J. Kelley, one of the most ardent advancers of Oregon's interests, have already been mentioned. By means of pamphlets, letters to newspapers, petitions to Congress, and the organization of a colonization society, Kelley did much to keep the excellencies of Oregon before the people of the East.

Other men who had a keen interest in Oregon, men who had influence in national affairs, were two United States senators from Missouri, T. H. Benton and L. F. Linn. In their honor two counties of Oregon have been named. Through a long career Senator Benton proved himself a good friend of the Oregon Country. Senator Linn is best known for the bills he introduced into Congress in 1838 and 1842. One bill was designed to secure the extension of United States protection over the Oregon Country; another, to have a chain of military posts erected along the route of the Oregon Trail for the protection of immigrants; a third bill introduced by Senator Linn provided that each settler in Oregon be given six hundred forty acres of land. Linn's bills did not pass the Senate, but his efforts helped to keep the needs of the Oregon Country before the government of the United States, and influenced people to settle here in the expectation that they would eventually receive a gift of land from the United States government.

Our nation's interest in Oregon. Oregon was not wholly forgotten by the President of the United States and other government officials at Washington during the ten years from 1830 to 1840. In 1836, President An-

drew Jackson sent a special agent, Lieutenant William A. Slacum, to gather information about the Oregon Country. At Lieutenant Slacum's suggestion a cattle company was formed in the Willamette Valley and cattle were brought in from California. Slacum's report on his visit, made upon his return to the East, gave information about the people, the soil, and the climate of the Oregon Country, and showed how great was the power and influence of the Hudson's Bay Company throughout the region. Lieutenant Slacum insisted that the Puget Sound region, on account of its excellent harbors, should never be surrendered. Thus he furthered the determination of his government to hold out for a boundary line lying along the forty-ninth parallel of latitude.

LEWIS F. LINN
A Friend of Oregon

In 1841 further interest in the Oregon Country was shown by the visit to that region of Captain Charles Wilkes, an officer of the American navy. Wilkes made surveys of rivers and harbors, and made a report on the character of the country. He also gave a description of the Willamette Valley and its inhabitants. Captain Wilkes became convinced that the harbor at the mouth of the Columbia River was unsafe, because one of his vessels, the *Peacock,* was lost in attempting to cross the

bar at the entrance to the river. On his return home, therefore, he strongly recommended to his government that the Puget Sound region never be surrendered, since it contained the best harbors for ocean-going vessels. Captain Wilkes' advice doubtless influenced the United States in its refusal to accept any boundary other than the forty-ninth parallel of latitude.

Interest in the Oregon Country was also shown by the appointment of Dr. Elijah White as Indian agent in 1842. Dr. White led the first large overland immigration to Oregon in that year.

The popular demand for Oregon. In the early forties an outbreak of the "Oregon fever" occurred. By that term was meant an excited interest in Oregon and a desire on the part of thousands of people to emigrate to that far-distant region. At that time began the annual emigrations from the Eastern States which were to bring some eight thousand people into the Oregon Country by the close of the year 1846. Naturally, when people began to think about taking that long journey, with all the sacrifices which it required, they wished to feel sure that the territory in which they were to make their future homes would be owned by their own government. For that reason an agitation for the settlement of the boundary dispute began. Although the story of the American occupation of Oregon is told in another chapter, we need to note here the influence of the "Oregon fever" in bringing to an end the long-standing boundary dispute between the United States and Great Britain.

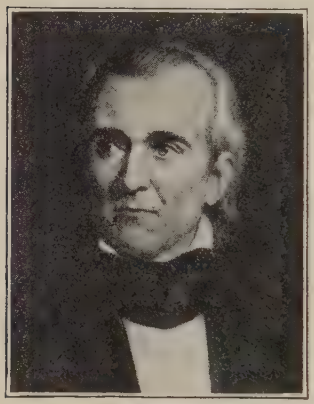
In 1842 the United States made a treaty with Great Britain which fixed the northeastern boundary of this

country as it is now shown on our maps. Many people who were interested in Oregon were disappointed that the northwestern boundary line was not arranged at the same time. The reason for a failure to reach an agreement on that matter was the unwillingness of either government to yield anything. The United States still insisted on the forty-ninth parallel of latitude as the boundary line, and Great Britain continued to insist on the Columbia River as a boundary.

However, at that time the United States was very anxious to secure a good harbor on the Pacific coast. As early as 1835 the government had tried to buy San Francisco from Mexico, which then controlled that region. To President John Tyler, in 1842, it seemed possible to secure this desirable object by agreeing with Great Britain to accept the Columbia River as the boundary of Oregon, in exchange for her influence in persuading Mexico to sell us San Francisco and northern California. Such an exchange of territory seems fair to us, but Great Britain declined the offer. Nothing ever came of the attempt except the spread of a rumor that the President was about to surrender Oregon to Great Britain. This rumor caused meetings to be held at many places throughout the states of the Ohio Valley; at those meetings great indignation was expressed because of this alleged intention to sacrifice Oregon.

The most important of the Ohio Valley meetings was a convention held at Cincinnati in July, 1843. It was attended by ninety-six delegates from six states of the Mississippi Valley. There it was declared that the right of the United States to Oregon from the forty-second

parallel of latitude to the parallel of 54°40′ was not to be questioned; that it was the duty of the United States government forthwith to spread the laws of the United States over Oregon; that emigration should be encouraged, a line of forts built from the Missouri River to the Pacific coast, and a fleet maintained on the Pacific Ocean. At other meetings it was urged that the United States should take immediate possession of Oregon and drive the British out by force. The contention was that "not one inch of Oregon" should be surrendered to Great Britain.



JAMES K. POLK

With such a widespread interest in Oregon, and with so many people demanding that the United States retain the whole of the region, the boundary question became a political one within a short time. Party leaders saw an opportunity to win votes by championing the cause of Oregon and demanding it for the United States.

"Fifty-four forty or fight!" By 1844, the cry for Oregon, on the part of the people of the western states, especially on the part of those in the states north of the Ohio River, had become strong enough to cause the Democratic party convention of that year to make a demand for the Oregon Country. This came about through a bargain made among the men in the convention. The delegates from the northwestern states, who

wanted Oregon, bargained with the delegates from the southern states, who wanted Texas. A candidate for President, James K. Polk, was nominated with a declaration in favor of "the re-occupation of Oregon and the re-annexation of Texas." The declaration also stated that "the title of the United States to the whole of Oregon is clear and unquestionable, and no part of it should be ceded to Great Britain." This demand for Oregon was shortened into the campaign cry, "Fifty-four forty or fight!" Because Polk stood for the acquisition of Oregon, along with Texas, he was elected President.

Conclusion of a boundary treaty: 1846. Polk became President in 1845. Although he and his party had demanded "the whole of Oregon," he felt himself bound by the offers of preceding Presidents to make the forty-ninth parallel of latitude the boundary line. Accordingly, he made that offer to the government of Great Britain. His proposal was at first rejected, but finally, in June, 1846, a treaty was made fixing the boundary at the forty-ninth parallel of latitude. Since that line, if drawn straight through to the Pacific Ocean, would have cut off the southern part of Vancouver Island, the United States agreed that the boundary should swerve southward and pass through the Strait of Juan de Fuca, thus leaving the whole of the island to Great Britain.

Thus a long controversy was ended, and ended by Great Britain's acceptance of the line for which the United States had contended.

Influences deciding the boundary dispute. The main influence that caused the British government to insist on the Columbia River as a boundary had been

the Hudson's Bay Company. As early as 1842 that Company determined to move its main post from Fort Vancouver to some place in the north. The southern end of Vancouver Island was selected and in 1843 the construction of buildings was begun. The new post was named Victoria. By 1845 the transfer from Fort Vancouver on the Columbia River had begun. This removal seemed to show that the Company either considered it impossible to hold the region north of the Columbia River against the advance of the American settlers, or else considered it no longer worth holding because its value as a fur-yielding region was exhausted. When the British government learned that the Hudson's Bay Company intended to remove its main post from the region in dispute, it no longer seemed worth while to contend for those few additional square miles of territory.

Moreover, at that time further insistence on the Columbia River as a boundary line seemed to foreshadow a war with the United States. The people of Great Britain could not understand the need of going into war for a few square miles of territory which interested no one except a fur-trading company. To most of them at that time the British Empire seemed to contain quite enough territory, and it was quite generally believed that a boundary dispute with the United States should not be permitted to lead to another war.

Too, a war would have meant the end of all trade between the two countries for the time being. In 1846, the year the treaty was made, the trade between the United States and Great Britain amounted to more than

ninety million dollars. By 1850 that amount had doubled. At that time the United States greatly lowered the duties paid on manufactured goods from Great Britain, who in turn began to admit American grain free of duty. Both nations thus had a more certain market for the commodities which their subjects had to sell. War between them would have destroyed that prosperous trade; therefore it seemed a very foolish thing. Furthermore, since the United States was about to go to war with Mexico, peace with Great Britain was for that reason the more desirable to the Americans.

The British government was well informed of the progress of American settlement in Oregon, as special agents had from time to time been sent to report on the situation there. One of those returned to England in 1846 in time to inform the British ministers of the great numbers of Americans already in the Oregon Country, and to tell of the steady flow of American immigration. The British well knew that Americans could not long be held back from the region north of the Columbia River. Perhaps this knowledge that the Oregon Country would be peopled by Americans led the British to yield to the forty-ninth parallel of latitude as a boundary.

ADDITIONAL READINGS

CAREY, C. H. *History of Oregon.* Chap. 31.
SCHAFER, JOSEPH. *History of the Pacific Northwest,* pp. 88-104; 173-185.

QUESTIONS

1. What part of Northwest America was claimed by Russia? By the United States? By Great Britain after 1824?

2. Upon what discoveries and explorations did the United States government base its claim to the Oregon Country?
3. How did the line 54°40′ become fixed as the northern boundary of the Oregon Country?
4. Give the boundaries of the territory in dispute between the United States and Great Britain.
5. For what did the treaty of joint occupation provide?
6. Only one family of Americans lived north of the Columbia River when the boundary treaty was made. How do you account for that?
7. How did the election of a President help to settle the boundary dispute?
8. Do you think that a demand for the whole of Oregon, and a seeming willingness to fight for it, may have helped towards securing the line along the forty-ninth parallel of latitude? Why?
9. Why did the Hudson's Bay Company move its main post from Fort Vancouver to Victoria?
10. Why was the 49° line not extended through to the Pacific Ocean?
11. Give all the reasons you can for thinking it wiser to settle the Oregon boundary by a treaty rather than go to war over it in 1846.
12. Why does the United States rather than Great Britain seem to have won in the boundary dispute?

CHAPTER XV

OREGON AS A TERRITORY

THE Provisional Government which was set up in 1843 was intended to be merely temporary. The settlers expected it to last only until the boundary dispute was finally settled. After the treaty with Great Britain, of June, 1846, had made sure the claim of the United States to that part of the Oregon Country lying south of the forty-ninth parallel of latitude, the people of Oregon expected that the United States Congress would at once provide a territorial government for the region. This, however, Congress failed to do. A governor and other officers for the territory, who were finally appointed by the President, did not reach Oregon until March, 1849. So the Provisional Government continued to serve, and for almost another three years after the boundaries were definitely established the people of Oregon continued to elect for themselves a governor and other officers.

Why Congress failed to act. The delay in providing a government for Oregon was due in part to the war between the United States and Mexico. That war lasted for two years, and during that time it absorbed all the attention of Congress. A more important reason for the delay was the disagreement between the two sections of the country, the North and South, as to how

a line should be drawn to separate slave territory from free territory. It was a question of permitting or prohibiting slavery in Oregon and the other new territory, including California, which was acquired from Mexico by that war. A long and bitter dispute over the question broke out in Congress, and for more than two years prevented the passage of an act organizing a government for Oregon.

Oregon not completely neglected. Congress did not, however, completely neglect Oregon. An act passed in May, 1846, provided for a regiment of mounted riflemen to protect travelers on the road to Oregon. For a time that regiment was diverted to Mexico on account of the war; afterward, however, it was sent to carry out its original purpose. Money to the amount of one hundred thousand dollars was granted for sending mail to Astoria by way of the Isthmus of Panama, to be carried each way every two months. Two postal routes were designated and two post offices were established, one at Astoria, the other at Oregon City, with a postmaster for each. An Indian agent was also appointed.

The people of Oregon become impatient. News traveled very slowly from the Atlantic coast to Oregon in those days, so the conclusion of the boundary treaty was not known in Oregon until November, 1846. Then the news reached Oregon City in a letter written by James Douglas, chief factor of the Hudson's Bay Company at Fort Vancouver. He had received the news from the captain of a Company vessel which came to the Oregon settlements from the Hawaiian Islands.

With the settlement of the title to the Oregon Coun-

try, the inhabitants of the region expected the United States to assume immediate control. They were fearful, however, that Congress might not understand their special needs, and that it might fail to provide the most necessary laws. Accordingly, memorials, or petitions, containing statements of the most pressing demands were sent to Washington. In those petitions the people asked for a donation of land at least as liberal as that provided by their own land law; they asked for grants of land for schools, for a towboat to guide vessels through the channel at the mouth of the Columbia River, and for protection against the Indians. After more than a year had passed, during which Congress did little for them, they complained that they were "without a proper government, they had no troops, no shipping, no lighthouses, no pilot boats, no appropriations of money for their needs — nothing, if they excepted two post routes that passed places where there were no settlers, and two post offices — the distributing office being at the mouth of the Columbia River, a hundred twenty miles from Oregon City, with no other conveyance for the mails between the two places than Indian canoes." So it was determined to send messengers to Washington, there to present in person the needs of Oregon in the hope that action by Congress might be hastened.

Messengers are sent to Washington. The messenger sent by Governor Abernethy in November, 1847, was Judge J. Quinn Thornton, who arrived in Washington in May of the next year. A few days after Judge Thornton's departure the Whitman Massacre occurred. Immediately thereafter came the outbreak of the war

against the Cayuse Indians as a result of the massacre. The massacre and the outbreak of an Indian war showed the need of military protection. The Oregon settlers felt that this outrage would never have occurred if a territorial government had been set up, if money had been appropriated for the purchase of Indian lands, and if an army had been sent to give the settlers protection.

GENERAL JOSEPH LANE
First Territorial Governor

At once another messenger, Joseph L. Meek, who had been selected by the Legislative Committee, was sent to Washington to carry the news of the Indian uprising and to present another memorial setting forth the needs of the colony. The interesting story of Meek's journey across the continent, and of his experiences in Washington, is told by his biographer, Mrs. Frances Fuller Victor, in a book entitled *River of the West*.

Congress gives Oregon a government. Before the messengers from Oregon reached Washington, the terms of the act organizing Oregon as a territory had been arranged. The news of the Indian outbreak influenced Congress to pass this act, which was dated August 13, 1848. It provided for a governor, a secretary, a marshal, judges, and other officers to be appointed by the President, as well as for a legislature of two houses to be elected by the people of Oregon Territory. While

under their Provisional Government the people had elected all their officers; now, with the exception of the members of their legislature, they elected none. Slavery was prohibited in the whole of Oregon Territory. Two sections of land in each township were set aside for schools. This arrangement was more generous than that provided for any other new territory; in those, only one section of land in each township had been given for schools. Besides providing enough money to pay the salaries of all the officers of the territory, twenty-six thousand five hundred dollars in addition was granted for the erection of public buildings and lighthouses, for the establishment of a library, and for other purposes.

General Joseph Lane appointed governor. President Polk appointed General Joseph Lane, of Indiana, as governor of Oregon Territory. He had been a general in the Mexican War. General Lane was born in North Carolina, and when only a child he had removed to Kentucky with his parents. At the age of fifteen years he had left his father's home to seek his fortune. By the time he was twenty years old he had married and settled in Indiana. At the time he came to Oregon he was forty-eight years old. General Lane was described as "not a large man, but well knit, tough and wiry, with a lively and ambitious disposition." He became very popular in Oregon and was elected to the highest offices which the people are able to grant to any citizen. After acting as governor for less than two years, General Lane was elected territorial delegate to Congress. He filled that office until 1859, at which time he was elected United States senator from Oregon. In 1860

he was nominated for the office of vice-president of the United States on one of the Democratic tickets.

Joe Meek was made United States Marshal, an office for which he seemed well qualified. Governor Lane, Meek, and others started for Oregon late in August, 1848, by way of the Santa Fe Trail and California. From San Francisco they took a boat to the Columbia River, and arrived at Oregon City on March 2, 1849. The next day the new territorial government was begun.

Oregon settlers are granted free land. Congress had yet to satisfy the expectation of the Oregon settlers that they should be given land. Before this time the United States government had asked payment for its lands. The people who had settled Oregon felt that they deserved special consideration because they had made many sacrifices in coming so great a distance to make their homes in the Far West. By occupying the territory, they had helped the United States to become sure of possessing it. Besides, those who had come after 1838 had been encouraged to do so by the bills which Senator L. F. Linn introduced into Congress. Those bills had never become laws, it is true, but they were considered as a promise that each settler should receive one section of land as a gift. In the land law of the Provisional Government, too, there had been a provision that each settler should be entitled to six hundred forty acres of land. In 1850 Congress satisfied the expectation of all those people by passing the Donation Land Law.

That law granted a half-section of land to every white man and Indian half-breed who was a citizen of the

United States, and who might be a resident of the territory by December 1, 1850. Each married woman was given a half-section in her own right, that is, for her very own. Thus each man and wife together held a whole section of six hundred forty acres. Persons who came to Oregon after December 1, 1850, and before December 1, 1851, received just half as much land.

Some effects of the Donation Land Law. Nowhere else within the United States could land be secured free. Elsewhere public land was sold in tracts of a hundred sixty acres. In Oregon as much as six hundred forty acres, and after December, 1850, three hundred twenty acres, were to be had for nothing as a gift from a generous national government. It is estimated that in 1852, mainly because of this opportunity to secure free land, fifteen thousand people entered Oregon Territory. In the next year about half as many more came. The census of 1850 had shown a population of about thirteen thousand. By the end of 1853 the population had increased to more than thirty-five thousand.

Another influence of the land law was to bring laggard suitors to a speedy decision. By marrying, a man could double the size of a claim. Early marriages, even of children at the tender age of twelve years, were common. The people of almost any community in the Willamette Valley can furnish stories of such youthful marriages.

Locating the capital of Oregon. The selection of a place where the governor and other territorial officers should reside, and where the legislature should have its place of meeting, caused a great deal of trouble. During 1843 the Provisional Government had met at Champoeg,

so that place may be thought of as the first capital of Oregon. The next year, Oregon City was made the capital; it remained so without dispute until 1850. In that year the territorial legislature passed an act making Salem the capital, giving Portland the penitentiary, and locating the university at Corvallis. Governor J. P. Gaines, who had succeeded Governor Lane, two of the judges, some of the other territorial officers, and a few members of the legislature refused to recognize the change, and would not go to Salem. The quarrel as to whether Oregon City or Salem were the capital continued for two years. In 1852 the United States Congress settled the question by deciding in favor of Salem.

But the decision of Congress did not end the controversy. In 1855, even after money had been granted by Congress for the construction of a capitol building at Salem, and after work on the building had begun, the legislature voted to locate the capital at Corvallis. The governor and other officers removed there, and the legislature opened its session there in December. But when the members of the legislature learned that they had no right to change the location of the capital without the consent of Congress, they quickly voted to return to Salem. Soon after the return of the legislature the unfinished capitol building burned. Twenty years passed before another was constructed.

In 1856 an effort was made finally to settle the dispute about the location of the territorial capital by submitting the question to a vote of the people. The vote was divided among choices for Eugene, Salem, Portland, and Corvallis, but there was no majority for any of those

towns. The people voted again in 1862, but again they could not decide among the four cities. In a third election, held in 1864, Salem received a majority of seventy-nine votes over the total vote for the three other places, and thus finally the capital was located there.

The formation of Washington Territory. Oregon was not to remain a single territory for a very long time. As early as 1851 the people north of the Columbia River began to talk about a government of their own. Americans had begun to enter that region as early as 1845, and within six years it had a population of about one thousand two hundred people, scattered in isolated settlements throughout the valley of the Cowlitz River northward to Puget Sound. As there were no roads in the region, communication with the Willamette Valley and other places was by water. The main trade of the settlers was by sea to California.

The people north of the Columbia River had very little to do with those south of it. They had a county organization of government, but they were not satisfied; they wanted a territorial government of their own. Soon they sent a petition to Congress in which they complained that the capital, Oregon City, was three hundred miles distant; that there were no roads in their section; that the government of Oregon Territory had very little interest in them; and that they had no Indian agent to quiet the Indians. They said that their resources in tillable land, lumber, coal, and gold, were large and abundant enough to support a separate government. They asked that the region in which they had made their homes be named *Columbia Territory*.

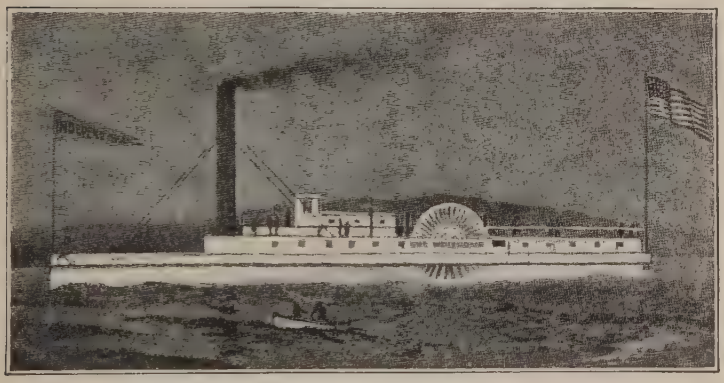
Congress heeded their request and in 1853 organized all that part of the Oregon Country lying north of the Columbia River and the forty-sixth parallel of latitude as a separate territory. It was given the name *Washington* instead of *Columbia,* because there was already a District of Columbia. The people south of the Columbia River approved of the division. Later, a third territory, Idaho, was formed from the Oregon Country.

For a time the people of southern Oregon, living in the Umpqua and Rogue river valleys, also considered separation. They held a convention at Jacksonville in 1854 to discuss the formation of a separate government, but as interest in the project soon died out, nothing ever came of it.

Oregon Territory becomes a state. Some people were not long content for Oregon to remain a territory; they wanted the territory to be made a state just like the thirty-one which then composed the Union. Those who remembered the days of the Provisional Government recalled a time of more complete self-government. Now, as a territory, all the governing officers except members of the legislature were appointed by the President, and most of them were sent to Oregon Territory from the eastern states. The men already in Oregon considered themselves as well qualified to hold office as were the outsiders. None of first three governors — Lane, Gaines, and Davis — had been an Oregon man.

At first the Territorial Legislature petitioned Congress that they be permitted to elect their own officers. This request was not granted, but in 1854 the President appointed an Oregonian, George L. Curry, as governor.

Curry continued to hold that position up to the end of the period of territorial government in 1859. The demand for statehood still continued, but why anybody at that time preferred statehood to territorial government is not now easy to understand. As a territory, all the expenses of government were paid out of the United States Treasury; as a state, the people were compelled to tax themselves more heavily for the support of the



THE *LOT WHITCOMB:* THE SECOND STEAMBOAT BUILT IN OREGON
It was launched at Milwaukie in December, 1850.

government. Besides, at that time the population seemed too small for a state which included so much territory.

At first most of the people were opposed to statehood. Three times, in 1854, in 1855, and in 1856, the people voted on the question and returned a majority of votes against admission to statehood. But the politicians, or office-seekers, were determined. They urged that the additional expense would be only fifty thousand dollars a year; that when Oregon became a state the United

States Government would grant public land that could be sold, and that the money so obtained could be used for schools and roads; that as a state Oregon would have two senators and a representative in Congress to plead for money to improve harbors, establish mail routes, build roads, and compensate for the expenses incurred in Indian wars. Those arguments proved persuasive, and by a large majority the people voted in favor of statehood in 1857. Congress, however, delayed, and Oregon was not admitted to the Union as a state until February 14, 1859.

Opposition to slavery and free negroes. At an election held on November 9, 1857, the people approved the constitution which had been made by a convention that met at Salem on August seventeenth of that year. At the same time they decided against slavery by a vote of 7,727 to 2,645, a majority of 5,082 votes against. By a vote of 8,640 to 1,081, free negroes and mulattoes were forbidden to come into Oregon.

ADDITIONAL READINGS

CAREY, C. H. *History of Oregon.* Chap. 32.
SCHAFER, JOSEPH. *History of the Pacific Northwest,* pp. 186-197.

QUESTIONS

1. Why did the people of Oregon have reason to feel themselves neglected by the government at Washington after 1846?
2. Why was the United States so slow to provide for Oregon's requests?
3. What were the advantages of statehood?

4. What is meant by a "donation land claim"? Were such claims taken up in the locality where you live?
5. Why were wives much sought after during the operation of the Donation Land Law?
6. Why did the people north of the Columbia River want a government of their own? If there had been railroads and paved highways as there now are, would those settlers have wanted to separate from Oregon?
7. Why should there have been such a struggle among towns to secure the site of the capital?
8. If Frances Fuller Victor's *River of the West* is in your library, read in it the story of Joe Meek's trip to Washington in 1847. While in Washington, what did Meek do that seems to have helped Oregon's cause?
9. What did the people of Oregon think about having slaves and free negroes in their state? Why?

CHAPTER XVI

INDIAN WARS IN THE OREGON COUNTRY

THE causes of Indian outbreaks and massacres, and of wars between the natives of the Oregon Country and the Northwest Coast, on one side, and the white men on the other, have never been clearly understood. It has been generally believed that the first meetings between members of the two races resulted in the discovery that the natives were uniformly kind, gentle, hospitable, and inclined to peace. Furthermore, they were excited by a great curiosity which caused them to make friendly advances toward the white newcomers. While the early travelers and explorers would probably agree to this, the statement is not generally true, as will be explained.

Some experiences of the early explorers. In Sitka Sound, during July, 1741, the Russian fur trader, Chirikoff, sent a boatload of men from his ship to get fresh water in the river. The men failed to return. Another boat was then sent out, and it likewise failed to come back. No trace of boat or crew was ever found. It is likely that the men were murdered by the savages of the coast, who lay in ambush.

Captain James Cook in 1778, and George Vancouver in 1792, found the Indians of the Nootka Sound region hospitably inclined. Between those two dates many fur

traders visited the island. "King" Maquina and his followers, of Nootka Sound, murdered the crew of the ship *Boston* in 1803; only John Jewitt and one companion escaped. Two years later the ship *Atahualpa,* from Rhode Island, was attacked at Nootka Sound, and two of its officers and six of its men were killed.

Captain Robert Gray, of Boston, on his first voyage to the Northwest Coast in 1788, put into Tillamook Bay for grass and water. While his men were on shore, they were assailed by the natives with fatal results.

The Washington Indians kill early explorers. The Spanish explorer, Juan de la Quadra, while cruising on the west coast of Destruction Island, about halfway between the Columbia River and the Strait of Juan de Fuca, lost a part of his crew in the same way that the Russian commander, Chirikoff, lost his men in Alaska. Twelve years later the crew of an English vessel, commanded by a Captain Barclay, was attacked in the same locality. Six men of that crew were lost.

Attacks by the Umpqua River Indians. The first white men to enter Oregon from the south were those in the party of Jedediah Smith. Coming from California in 1829, they presently found themselves surrounded by the Umpqua River Indians. Smith lost all but two of his men, and all his horses and valuable furs, as has already been related. The Rogue River Indians also seem to have been known for their bad character from the time that white men first came among them. In 1841 they made war upon a part of Captain Charles Wilkes' exploring expedition which was traveling through their country.

Whites often provoked the Indians. Against the accounts of instances in which the first meeting between men of the two races resulted in bloodshed, many accounts could be offered to prove the kindness and friendship of some Indian tribes. If the Indians could tell their version of the story we could perhaps better understand what occurred on many occasions. White men often neglected to be as courteous to the Indians as they were to other white men. They used the land and cut the grass which rightly belonged to the Indian; they took the water and provisions of the red man without asking his permission. Captain Salter and the crew of the *Boston* were killed by the Indians for sheer revenge, because the captain cursed the Nootka chief for breaking a shotgun.

Uncertainty about cause of early dissensions. In the early days of exploration, Spaniards, Englishmen, and Americans were alike attacked. In 1810 the Winship brothers, on the lower Columbia River, aroused the dislike of the Chinooks probably by using the land for farming without offering to pay something for it. Fur traders at Nootka Sound sometimes cheated the Indians shamelessly, and the Russians in Alaska early began treating the natives of that region cruelly. Gray's men at Tillamook Bay forgot about the rights of the Indian villagers when they took wood, water, and grass without the consent of the natives, but even so, Lewis and Clark afterward found that same people friendly. Fully to understand the Whitman Massacre would require a knowledge of Cayuse fears. Those Indians feared the good doctor's medicine, they were afraid they would lose their lands,

and they doubtless wanted to revenge themselves on the people of the mission because of certain misdeeds of the whites. Even in the later Indian wars of eastern Oregon, herders and stockmen who had live stock on the tribal lands of the Indians were the first to be killed.

The men of the Hudson's Bay Company were for the most part unmolested, because, in the first place, the Company had a well-known Indian policy which was successful. The Company did not want the Indian lands; it left the red man in full possession of his hunting and fishing grounds. Moreover, it bought his furs from him and in exchange gave him guns and ammunition and those articles of food and clothing by means of which his life became easier and happier. The Company and the tribes had some use for one another, and in consequence friendship grew up among them. For much the same reasons the missionaries, excepting Dr. Whitman, lived at peace with the redskins.

The Cayuse War: 1847-1848. News of the Whitman Massacre reached the settlers in the Willamette Valley early in December, 1847. Governor Abernethy at once called upon the people to arm themselves for war. In a short time the community became highly excited because it was feared that the savages east of the Cascade Range would take the warpath. In spite of this fear it was decided that the murderers of Dr. Whitman should be punished. Then the white men's hatred of the Indians flamed higher than ever before.

Organization of the "Oregon Rifles." A military company of fifty men, under the command of Captain H. A. G. Lee took the field and reached The Dalles four

days before Christmas. Meantime the Provisional Government was busy raising a regiment of volunteers. Companies were organized at Portland and in Champoeg, Linn, and Clackamas counties. The Canadians of French Prairie shouldered their guns and went to war under the leadership of Captain Thomas McKay.

Beginning of the Cayuse campaign. A fort, called Fort Lee, was erected at The Dalles. Afterward headquarters were established at Waiilatpu Mission, where the massacre had occurred. A base of supplies, called Fort Gilliam, in honor of Colonel Cornelius Gilliam of the Oregon troops, was made at the cascades of the Columbia River. The government of Oregon had only one cannon, a small gun called a nine-pounder, and that was taken across the mountains to be used in the war against the tribes. The troops marched toward the Indian country, which lay in the direction of the Deschutes and Umatilla rivers.

The allies of the Cayuses. At the approach of the soldiers, the murderers of Dr. Whitman tried to get all the tribes of the eastern Oregon Country to join in a general war against the whites. Although, for the most part, the Cayuses themselves had no desire for war, the murderers went among them stirring up fear and hatred. The Palouses took the warpath with the Cayuses; the Nez Percés remained peaceful; the Yakimas sent word that they too would remain quiet at home.

The fate of Chief Gray Eagle. The Cayuses, who expected to have an easy victory over the white men, were about to learn that the fighters who were now coming against them were not the same as the men of

the immigrant trains. When, in earlier times, the wagon trains passed through the Cayuse country, the settler, with his rifle, was ever alert. He showed no warlike spirit, however, because he had to guard his family, his cattle, and his household goods, and for safety's sake he could not afford to provoke trouble if he could by any means avoid doing so. To the Indian the immigrants had appeared to be almost timid because they refused to fight even when repeatedly insulted and often when robbed of their belongings.

The Cayuses were now to learn of their sad mistake. Troops never went into battle who were braver than those settlers now marching into a hostile region where all the odds were against them. Skirmishes were fought. Some of the chiefs claimed they had supernatural powers and that the white men's guns could not hurt them. Such claims were made by Chief Five Crows and by Chief Gray Eagle. In one battle they tried to prove their assertions to their warriors. The Indians, mounted on their ponies, were circling around the soldiers, when suddenly the two chiefs rode up close and shot a dog belonging to a settler. The soldiers returned the fire. Chief Five Crows was badly wounded in the arm; Chief Gray Eagle was instantly killed. The Indians, now wiser though sadder, retreated with the regiment in pursuit.

Peace the aim of the Oregon government. Shortly after the first battles were fought, the Oregon government changed its plan of carrying on the war. Perhaps the governor and his advisers now realized how difficult it would be to win a war from a strong tribe such as the Cayuses, who might at any time find powerful allies

among their neighbors. The Oregon Trail passed through the Cayuse country, and it seemed certain that the immigrant trains from the eastern states would be attacked if the war with the natives continued.

Late in January, 1848, Captain Lee was instructed to demand the Whitman murderers as the price of peace

NORTH ABUTMENT OF THE BRIDGE OF THE GODS

to the Cayuses. If the tribe were willing to surrender those actually guilty, it might have peace and live in peace in the Cayuse country. Otherwise the soldiers would drive the whole tribe out of the region and take the Indian lands for settlement by the whites.

Governor Abernethy appointed Joel Palmer, Robert Newell, and Captain H. A. G. Lee to go to the Indians

and discuss the proposal. Starting for the upper country, they sent word to the Indians to meet them at the Whitman Mission. Only the Nez Percés and some Cayuses came. It was now to be seen that the Cayuses as a tribe had no heart for the war, and that the murderers among them had taken control of affairs. Although his son had been cruelly murdered in California by the whites, Chief Yellow Serpent himself had no wish for war. Chief Ellis was away on a buffalo hunt. Chief Camaspelo was friendly to the settlers because Dr. Whitman had once ridden many weary miles to visit the Indian's sick child. Savage that he was, he was unwilling to act ungrateful by warring against the whites.

After Governor Abernethy's letter had been read and interpreted to them, many chiefs spoke. Joseph, a Nez Percé chief, said: "Now I show my heart. When I left my home I took the book [the Bible written in the Indian language] in my hand and brought it with me. It is my light. I heard that the Americans were coming to kill me. Still I held my book before me and came on. I have heard the words of your chief. I speak for all the Cayuses present and for my people. I do not want my children to engage in this war, although my brother is wounded. You speak of the murderers. I shall not meddle with them. I bow my head. This much I speak."

Answering the request of Governor Abernethy that the murderers be given up, Chief Jacob, of the Cayuse tribe, said: "It is the law of this country that the murderer shall die. That law I keep in my heart because I believe it is the law of God — the first law."

Continuation of the Cayuse War. Before a great while the soldiers learned that meetings were being held among the Indians, and that speeches were being made to urge a delay of the war and the capture of the murderers. Soon, however, battles were again fought. At the ford of the Touchet River a bloody conflict was waged for some hours before the soldiers could cross. During this campaign Colonel Gilliam was accidentally killed by the discharge of a musket. After his death Governor Abernethy appointed Captain Lee to take command.

CHIEF JOSEPH

The end of the Cayuse War. During the struggle with the Cayuses, the soldiers in the field were often without food and munitions. Often, too, they were far from the fort, pursuing the murderers who had little difficulty in keeping out of their way. Finally the fighting came to an end. Spring had come and the snows had melted off the mountains. The Cayuses could now go anywhere and so avoid capture. When June came the soldiers of the white forces wished to return to their farms in the Willamette Valley, so a small garrison was left in the Cayuse country and the remainder of the troops then returned home. The Cayuses were told that their lands would be occupied until the murderers were given up to the authorities.

Execution of Dr. Whitman's murderers. For two or three years after the close of the Cayuse War, the murderers of Dr. Whitman remained uncaptured. The tribe itself could not return to its old home, and white men were rapidly coming in and taking the Cayuse country. Finally the Cayuses decided to give up the murderers to the officers of the government. Governor Lane went up into the Indian country and brought the culprits down to the jail at Oregon City, since the only court in Oregon that could try the five accused Cayuses was located there. The accused Indians offered many ponies and blankets for lawyers to defend them. A jury to hear the case was selected from among the citizens. It was clearly proved that the accused had planned the murder of Dr. Whitman, his family, and the other people at the mission. The jury found the Indians guilty, and the judge sentenced them to be hanged. Governor Lane signed the papers ordering the execution, and it was duly carried out. Thus ended the last scene in the long and bloody affair of the Whitman Massacre and the consequent Cayuse War.

The Battle of the Abiqua. Early in March, 1848, at the very time when the peace meeting was taking place at the Whitman mission, the Klamath Indians, under Chief Red Blanket, were making trouble for the settlers in the Champoeg country. As they traveled back and forth along the old Klamath Trail, which led from southeastern Oregon over the Cascade Range to the land of the Molalas, their kindred, the Klamaths had been busy stealing the settlers' cattle. Since most of the men were away in the Cayuse War, the Indians were frightening

the unprotected women and children who lived in the lonely cabins of the region.

At about that time two Cayuse spies came to the Molala and Klamath village located on the Abiqua River. They wanted the tribes in the Willamette Valley to make war upon the weakened settlements. The Molalas and Klamaths refused. Having been captured by settlers, the spies made a daring escape from their guards by leaping over a high cliff into the flooded Abiqua. Without knowing that the spies had failed of their purpose, the settlers decided to send the Klamaths back to their own country. The Klamaths refused to go, and Chief Coosta, speaking for the Molalas, contended that the settlers had no right to send them away. After an angry meeting at the home of Richard Miller, the settlers gathered at the cabin of John Warnock. Daniel Waldo was elected leader and the company set out toward the Klamath camp. On March 7 and 8, 1848, battles were fought between the settlers and the Klamaths. Thirteen Indians, including Chief Red Blanket, were killed, and one settler was badly wounded by an arrow. Wailing their death song, the Klamaths retreated along the trail to their southern homes, never again to return. The Molalas took no part in the fight.

Beginning of the Rogue River War. The Indians of the Oregon Country soon had further cause for complaint against the white men. With the passage of the Donation Land Law in September, 1850, settlers began to surge into Oregon in ever-increasing numbers. At about that time gold was discovered in Southern Oregon, and groups of armed miners at once began to search

everywhere for the precious metal, without thinking to ask permission of the Indians for passing through or occupying their lands.

The Coquilles go on the warpath. Port Orford was discovered in 1851, and in attempting to settle the country thereabout bloody conflicts were waged. At Battle Rock only the great courage of the settlers prevented a general massacre. In September, W. G. T'Vault, in command of a small party, was betrayed by an Indian guide with a consequent loss of half his men.

Indian wars in southern Oregon. Between the years 1852 and 1856, almost continuous war went on south of the Willamette River. Although this has been called the Rogue River War, other sections of the country suffered as well, and tribes other than the Shastas were killing and burning at the time. The Klamaths, Umpquas, and Coquilles were also engaged in that conflict. After the first outbreak, Governor Lane came down and made a treaty at Table Rock, but it did not prevent further bloodshed. There was constant friction between the Indian agents, who for their part tried to protect the natives, and the settlers and officials on the other, who contended for their own interests and welfare. Indians often left the reservations without permission, and subsequently got into trouble. A company of volunteers from California pursued some Indians on the Rogue River reservation and demanded that the agent turn them over. He refused to do so.

The Indian War of 1855. Late in the summer of 1855 the war scare arose again, but the Indian agent among the Shastas declared that those Indians wanted

only peace. To prevent possible conflicts, Joel Palmer, Oregon Indian Agent, ordered the arrest of any Indians found off their reservations without a written permit.

The massacre at Butte Creek. Early on the morning of October 8, 1855, a company of volunteers, without military orders, went to the Indian village on Butte Creek and began firing into the cabins. They killed twenty-three and wounded many others. When the troops went to investigate, they found that the settlers had killed many Indian women, children, and old men. Next day the war began in earnest. The Indians appeared everywhere, they killed settlers and drove off or slaughtered the white men's cattle.

The settlers and soldiers took up the trail, and the conflict became a war of extermination. So fierce was the fighting at the battle of Galice Creek that every house but one in the little mining town was burned. Late in October, fifteen companies of soldiers were engaged. Scores of settlers were killed. No matter how bravely the savages fought, they were certain to lose in the end. After another year the Indians grew tired of fighting. Driven from their homes, their families scattered, they were glad to make peace and go upon their reservations.

War with the Modocs. As has been explained, the Modocs lived in southeastern Oregon around Tule Lake and Clear Lake and in the Lost River Valley. From the first the tribe was known to be fierce and warlike. Although they agreed to a treaty in 1864, and at that time went to live on the Klamath Reservation, they were never satisfied and often complained. Captain Jack, one

of the Modoc chiefs, left the reservation and took his band back to their old home on Lost River in 1870.

The Modoc War followed Captain Jack's final refusal to return to the reservation. Although his fighting men numbered less than a hundred, for more than two years he defied both State and Nation and proved himself an able leader. He claimed that an Indian agent in California had given him permission to leave the reservation. He wanted a reservation on Lost River, and said that he could not live in peace with his Klamath neighbors on the Klamath Reservation. At each of several meetings with officers of the government he grew more and more threatening, and finally he flatly refused to return to the Klamaths. To the officers it now seemed certain that Captain Jack was about to make war on the settlers. An order for his arrest was issued, and soldiers were sent out to bring him back to the reservation. Then the bloody war began. After the first battle on Lost River, Captain Jack fled to the lava beds on Tule Lake, killing settlers along the way.

The war in the lava beds. At the lava beds the Modocs were attacked by a force of four hundred men. The Indians hid themselves among the rocks and in the chasms; the soldiers were defeated with a loss of forty men, killed and wounded.

After the battle the government sent men with instructions to make peace. While the meeting was being held, Captain Jack drew his revolver and shot General Canby dead. This was the signal for an attack on the other whites present. After this act of base treachery the war was resumed.

Second defeat of the soldiers. A force of more than nine hundred regular soldiers, assisted by seventy Indian scouts from Warm Springs, was now sent against Captain Jack. On April 26, 1873, a battle was fought in which Lieutenants Thomas and Wright and twenty-four men were killed. Again Captain Jack escaped. In one battle the Modoc chief appeared in the uniform of the murdered General Canby. Fighting and fleeing to another place was the Modoc scheme of warfare.

The surrender of Captain Jack. With the powerful force now arrayed against them, the Indians had no chance. Finally the red warriors grew tired of fighting, many of them deserted Captain Jack, and most of them gave up in May, 1873. Early in the following month, after fleeing across the boundary line into California, Captain Jack himself surrendered to Captain Perry of the regular forces. The leaders of the Modocs were taken to Fort Klamath, tried for the murder of General Canby and others, found guilty, and hanged. The others were sent to a reservation in Kansas where a remnant of the tribe remains.

The Nez Percé War: 1877. By a treaty made in 1855, the Nez Percés gave up much of their tribal land and settled upon a reservation, a portion of which included Wallowa Valley in eastern Oregon. This was the home of Chief Joseph and his people. After the discovery of gold in the Indian country, a new treaty was made in 1863, and Chief Joseph's band was ordered to Lapwai, Idaho. At first the Nez Percés refused to go. Before the matter could be settled, white men committed outrages and war followed. Chief Joseph was an able

leader who defeated the whites in several battles. Finally a large force was sent to fight the Nez Percés. Chief Joseph then tried to lead his people, men, women, and children, into Canada. Although surrounded by troops on every side, yet for a thousand miles across the mountains of Idaho and Montana he kept out of reach of the soldiers who had been sent against him, and almost reached the boundary of Canada before he was finally taken. He was promised much on condition that he give up. He did give up, but the promises made to him were never kept. Chief Joseph and more than four hundred of the Nez Percés were sent to Indian Territory, where many later died of disease. In 1883 some were permitted to return to their old homes. Chief Joseph and his men were then sent to Colville Reservation, and there he spent his last years, interested in educating the children of his tribe. He died in September, 1904. The town of Joseph, Oregon, is named after him.

Indian reservations and treaties. In 1908 there were one hundred sixty-one Indian reservations in the United States; of those, Oregon had five. The plan of putting the tribes on land set aside for them is an old one which originated in Canada, when that country was under French control, and was subsequently followed by the English. Our government began this policy in 1786. At first reservations were made by treaty with the Indians. Congress controlled the making of them for a time; now the President has control. Indians sent to reservations have to change their manner of living; farming, instead of hunting and fishing, becomes the means of securing food.

Indian reservations of Oregon. The Indian reservations of Oregon, as first established during the ten years from 1850 to 1860, were (1) Grande Ronde, (2) Siletz, (3) Warm Springs, (4) Klamath, (5) Umatilla. The last named has now been discontinued. These reservations once included more than one and a quarter million acres. For the most part the tribes on the reservations have gradually wasted away, many being now extinct. A few tribes, among which are the Klamaths, are thriving. In 1914 there were 6,800 Indians in Oregon, of whom 4,400 were on reservations.

A friend of the Indians: Joel Palmer. Joel Palmer, who made many treaties with the Indians of Oregon, and who had much to do with setting aside the reservations in this state, was born in Canada, in 1810, of Quaker parents. He came to Oregon in 1845. In 1847 Governor Abernethy appointed Palmer as peace worker among the Cayuses, and in the same year the legislature selected him as superintendent of Indian affairs. Palmer's speech at the Whitman Mission, in 1848, did much to make the Cayuses realize their mistake in going to war, and probably prevented the Nez Percés from joining them. Starting in 1854, Palmer, as United States Indian Agent for Oregon, visited many tribes and made treaties by which vast areas of Indian land in Oregon were sold to the United States government. His fairness won the respect of both native and settler, and did much to avert further outrages and wars.

ADDITIONAL READINGS

Brady, Cyrus Townsend. *Northwestern Fights and Fighters.* Pp. 3-43; 44-75; 229-257.

CAREY, C. H. *History of Oregon.* Chaps. 33 and 34.
JUDSON, KATHERINE B. *Early Days in Old Oregon,* pp. 205-223.

QUESTIONS

1. Why were the Indians at times friendly, at other times hostile, toward the first white men who landed on the Northwest Coast?
2. Do you consider Indians or whites most responsible for those first conflicts? Why?
3. Why did the Hudson's Bay Company escape attack by Indians?
4. Why did the Cayuse War last so long?
5. Where was Fort Lee located? Fort Gilliam?
6. What tribes assisted the Cayuses in the war of 1847-1848?
7. Explain why the Indians were mistaken in believing they could easily win the Cayuse War.
8. What terms of peace were offered the Cayuses? Why?
9. What was the fate of the Whitman murderers?
10. Show from this incident how all the people may suffer from the wrongdoing of a few.
11. Give the causes of the Indian wars in southern Oregon.
12. Why did Chief Captain Jack begin the Modoc War?
13. How were the Modocs punished? Was the punishment just?
14. What wrongs were responsible for the outbreak of the Nez Percé War?
15. Locate the present Indian reservations of Oregon. Are these supported by the state government or by the United States government? Describe Indian life on a reservation.
16. Write a theme on the work of Joel Palmer.
17. Tell the story of an Indian war or conflict that took place in your section of the state.

CHAPTER XVII

SOCIAL PROGRESS IN OREGON: 1849-1925

THROUGHOUT its history, Oregon, like most of the other states, has grown from a rude frontier settlement in which the pioneers had few of the comforts and advantages enjoyed today. Although such progress has been slow, it has been constant; gradually and uninterruptedly the old ways of living have given place to new ones which have better met the ever-changing demands of life. On the following pages we shall learn something of the changes in methods of living which have taken place in the history of our state; in other words, we shall make some study of Oregon's social development.

The first schools of Oregon. Because the government of this country is a democracy, designed to express the will of the whole nation, the people of the United States have from the first regarded education as a matter of the greatest importance. The welfare of the states and of the nation is closely bound up with the extension and development of education among all the people. At no time have the people of Oregon failed in their duty toward the advancement of education, for even in pioneer days it was a topic of more than ordinary concern.

The first school established in the Oregon Country was taught by John Ball at Fort Vancouver. It was opened

in 1832, during the days of the fur traders and before either missionaries or settlers had entered the region. Three or four years later Jason Lee opened a school at the Methodist mission at Mission Bottom, and early in the forties elementary schools for the children of both settlers and Indians were established at various places. In 1838 Dr. Marcus Whitman opened a school near Fort

DEADY HALL: FIRST BUILDING ON THE CAMPUS
University of Oregon at Eugene

Walla Walla; there the Cayuse Indians were taught religion. Early in the next decade the Roman Catholics started schools in the settlements about St. Paul. There the white and Indian children were taught.

In his message to the legislature of the Provisional Government, delivered in 1847, Governor Abernethy said in part: "The cause of education demands your attention. School districts should be formed in several counties, and schoolhouses built; teachers to be employed by

the people, I have no doubt." Although at that time there were as yet no laws providing for the establishment and maintenance of schools, the people of the region well knew the governor's intention. In the larger settlements meetings of the citizens were at once held, and teachers were employed in accordance with the governor's wishes.

Early schools and school laws. The schoolhouse of those early pioneer days was usually a log cabin having

MULTNOMAH COUNTY SCHOOL BUS

neither floors nor windows. The only light available came through the doorway at one end of the structure and the great open chimney of the smoky fireplace at the other. The first teachers of the schools held in such buildings were the local preachers or some better educated men or women of the settlement. In any case the teacher was never a person who had been specially trained for the work, but even so, some progress was made.

The people as a whole paid no taxes for school support;

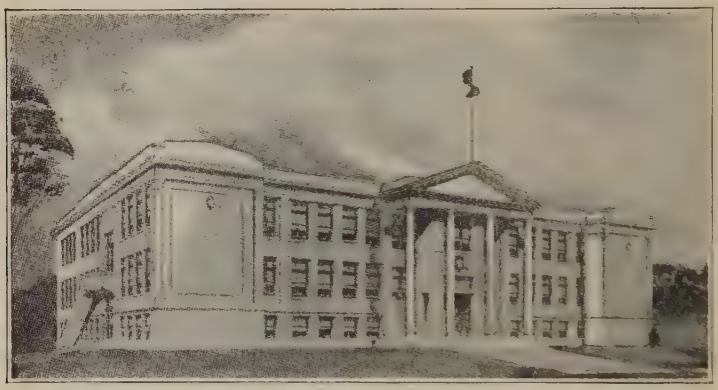
instead, each family that sent one or more children to school paid a fixed amount for the instruction of each pupil. Not until the administration of Governor Lane were laws relating to education passed. At that time the legislature passed a law requiring all citizens to pay taxes for the support of schools. From that time on education was free to the child. Many people, however, still preferred to follow the old plan of paying tuition to a teacher.

Because of the slow growth of the settlements, and because there were as yet very few towns, school districts, as provided for by the recent laws, were not generally constituted until some years later. By the year 1855 most of the counties had been subdivided into school districts, and schools were being quite regularly taught. At that time the school year as a rule lasted for only three or four months, because there was not enough tax money to pay for a longer term. The resulting lengthy vacation provided a long period during which the boys and girls of pioneer days could do their share of the work required of every pioneer family.

The early waste of school lands. When Congress organized Oregon as a territory, in 1848, two sections of land in each township were set aside for school purposes. The intention was that the land should be so administered by the local authorities that the profits could be used for the support and furthering of education. It was pointed out at the time that the wise use of the school lands would maintain a good public school system without imposing too great a burden upon the taxpayers. The law provided that the money obtained from the sale of such

school lands should be put into a school fund, and that only the interest from the fund should be spent for school purposes. The law also provided that an equal amount of money should be apportioned to the education of every child, regardless of where he might live within the boundaries of the territory.

The nation's rich gift of school lands was sadly wasted before many years had passed. Much of the land, which



HIGH SCHOOL AT GRANT'S PASS, JOSEPHINE COUNTY

in those days was covered by valuable timber that today would be worth thousands of dollars, was sold or traded to speculators for the pitiable sum of a few dollars an acre. The resulting fund of school money is in consequence so small that today the citizens of Oregon must pay large amounts each year as taxes for the support of the public schools. The grasping and unscrupulous "land thieves" of pioneer days are even yet literally stealing from the pockets of the people, who were entitled to the full value of those lands set aside for school purposes.

Social progress through education. Social progress, another term for social development, is always largely brought about through the better education of the people at large. The story of Oregon's social progress through education, although essentially like that of the other states, is in itself very interesting reading.

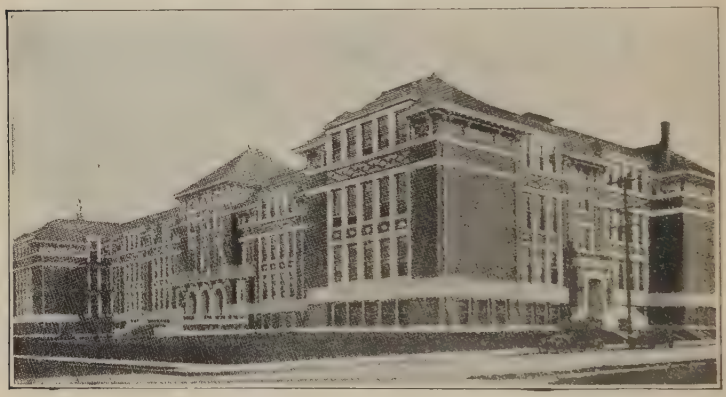
In pioneer days farms were large and in consequence

LINCOLN HIGH SCHOOL AT PORTLAND

population was very much scattered. As we have already learned, there were very few towns. Life in those times, as compared with that of today, was quite simple. If one could read and write, and if one knew enough arithmetic to add up bills and to keep simple accounts, one had enough education to make a showing in the world. A knowledge of advanced subjects was unnecessary.

Gradually conditions changed; the customs of pioneer life had to give way before new and more advanced

methods of living. With the coming of the railroads towns grew up at Portland, Salem, Astoria, Eugene, The Dalles, and many other places. Living conditions in such communities became quite different from what they had been in the open country. The towns developed a more highly organized social life because there numbers of people lived close together. The community possessed churches, a library, perhaps an academy or a college. In



JEFFERSON HIGH SCHOOL AT PORTLAND

short, the towns became the centers of learning, of culture. City government was established, and such laws were made as are required for the general welfare when large groups of people reside in single communities.

Important changes in the methods of living also took place rapidly. The electric light and the telephone were early introduced; shortly thereafter the gas engine became common. Life soon became much as we of today know it. With all such changes came an ever-increasing

demand for more schools and better ones. It became necessary to instruct young people in many new and different subjects, to teach them many things which their parents had not been compelled to learn, so that the younger generation would be better able to meet the new conditions. It was no longer enough to know merely reading, writing, and arithmetic. One by one, grammar, history, physiology, and other even more advanced subjects came to be added to the course of study. The knowledge obtained by a study of such subjects helped people better to understand life and its requirements, it made people better able to enjoy life, it enabled them to become better citizens in every way. An understanding of how to avoid sickness and to combat disease is an assurance of the physical well-being of the entire community. A knowledge of our own nation's history and of the history of other peoples helps toward a solution of the problems of government, and makes for peace and friendship at home and abroad. Social progress has come about through the better equipment of men and women to do their share of work in the world and so to achieve happiness and satisfaction. The schools are largely responsible for this, for it is only through a well-organized school system that all young people are reached.

TYPICAL ONE-ROOM SCHOOL

The establishment of high schools. Until some twenty years ago nearly all the public schools of our state were of the elementary grade. Various churches maintained high schools, called academies, which resembled the public high schools of today. Such academies taught practically the same subjects that are today offered in our high schools.

The best known of the early academies were the Portland Academy at Portland, Tualatin Academy at Forest Grove, and the Oregon Institute at Salem, the last named being a part of Willamette University. The Santiam Academy at Lebanon was a well-known Methodist center of learning in the early days. In southern Oregon was Wilbur Academy. Jefferson Institute, in the town of Jefferson, was well attended, and Sublimity College, at Sublimity, attracted pupils from long distances. Milton Wright, father of the Wright brothers who later invented the airplane, was once a teacher at Sublimity College. Bethel Institute, in Polk County, was supported by the Disciples of Christ.

In addition to the schools mentioned, all of which were of the academy type, there were many others, for it was the ambition of the citizens of every growing town to have such an institution. Such academies supplied the demand for a higher education and did a good service in their day. As pupils almost always had to pay tuition at the academies, many children in the state were unable to attend school beyond the elementary grades because their parents could not afford to pay tuition or were unwilling to do so. Since Oregon was at that time progressing rapidly in every way, a decided need for free public high

schools presently came to be felt by people generally. After provision for such schools had been made, there were at first only a few of them here and there throughout the state. Soon, however, such schools were organized in almost every city and town. Some counties, in which there was only one important town, established a county high school. Such is the school at Klamath Falls.

A law passed in 1915 provides that every child who graduates from a grammar school is entitled to attend

UNION HIGH SCHOOL AT SANDY, CLACKAMAS COUNTY
Has nine classrooms a gymnasium, and an auditorium.

high school at the county's expense, and that districts which have no high school are obliged to pay the cost of educating their children in the high school of some district which does have one. The result of this law has been a rapid increase in the number of high schools throughout the state. There are now more than two hundred of them maintained by the city or the county.

With the establishment of high schools supported by public taxation in almost every town, the academies have been forced to close. For the most part, citizens are unwilling to send their children to academies, which demand

tuition for their services, when they are in any event compelled to pay taxes for the support of free public high schools where the same subjects are taught.

Colleges and universities of the state. The Oregon Institute, the first institution of higher learning in the state, was founded by Jason Lee and his followers. The Institute was a Methodist school. It prospered to such an extent that in 1853 it was chartered as Willamette Uni-

WILLAMETTE UNIVERSITY BUILDINGS AT SALEM

versity. The following year, the Pacific University was founded at Forest Grove. The Roman Catholic Church supports its own school system, which includes parochial schools, academies, and colleges. Mount Angel College, the oldest Roman Catholic college in the state, was established by the Benedictine Fathers in 1887.

State institutions of higher learning. The state of Oregon supports several institutions of higher learning. These include the University of Oregon, at Eugene, the

Oregon Agricultural College, at Corvallis, and normal schools at Monmouth and Ashland. All these institutions, except the Ashland Normal School, established in 1925, were at one time private denominational schools; they were later taken over by the state.

The normal schools train people for the work of teaching in the elementary schools. The Agricultural College is a vocational school which offers instruction in agriculture, engineering, mining, pharmacy, home economics, and other technical branches. It also trains people to teach those subjects in the high schools. The University of Oregon prepares its students for the professions of medicine, law, journalism, and teaching. It has a School of Education which trains high-school teachers. The School of Medicine, claimed to be one of the best in the United States, is located at Portland. The state's institutions of higher learning improve with each successive year, and every year also sees a marked increase in the enrollment of each institution.

The life of the Oregon farmer. Life on the Oregon farms has not been marked by the rate of progress which has characterized that of the towns. There are doubtless many reasons for this state of affairs. In earlier times, many farms were situated at a great distance from any town or city. The farmer received mail only on the occasion of his infrequent visits to the nearest post office. For the most part the country schools were of the ungraded sort, the schoolhouses were poorly built and were far from pleasant or even comfortable as places for work and study. The almost impassable roads of winter kept the farmer and his family at home.

Almost the only community life which the farmer enjoyed centered about the activities of the country church and school. For a large part of the year, life for those who dwelt on farms was a dreary and lonely affair with little to enliven the dull monotony of existence and to make it interesting in the slightest degree.

Social service of the "Patrons of Husbandry." In 1867, the "Patrons of Husbandry," an organization

THE HIGH SCHOOL AT CORVALLIS

whose aim is to help farmers work to their own interests, was organized in Washington, D. C. Each local unit of the organization is called a "Grange," and by that name the organization itself is commonly known. The organization announced as its purpose "to labor for the good of our Order, our Country, and Mankind." It sought to increase the comforts and attractions of farm homes, to maintain respect for law, to teach the value and profit of diversified crops, to systematize farm work, and to establish a system of coöperative buying and sell-

ing. It also fought alleged monopolies and sought to secure the reduction of railroad freight rates.

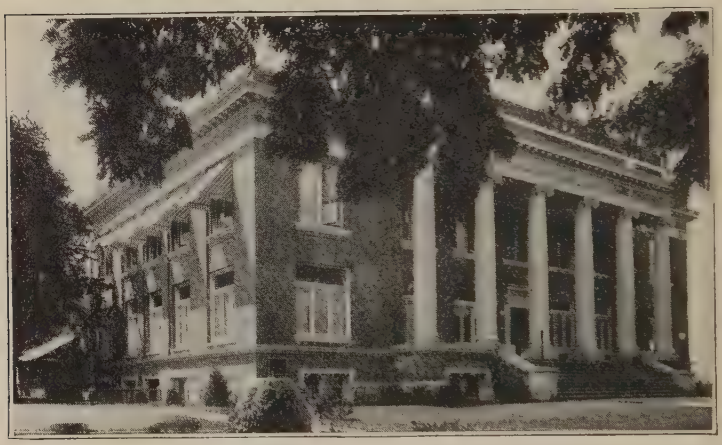
In 1873 local "Granges" were organized throughout Oregon, and in September of that year those units sent delegates to Salem to form a "State Grange." For a few years the organization grew rapidly; it reached its greatest growth in 1875, at which time there were more than two hundred local "Granges" with a total membership of more than ten thousand. The "Grange" established warehouses and marketed the farmer's grain. It even went so far as to build boats in which to transport farm produce down the Willamette and Columbia rivers to Astoria.

The business enterprises on which the "Grange" embarked did not, however, prove successful; indeed, the organization itself failed to work those wonders which it had led the farmers to expect. With the coming of hard times in 1876, the membership of the organization rapidly fell away, and by 1896 there were only fifty local "Granges" in the whole state; those numbered only about eighteen hundred members.

In 1896, however, the "Grange" began to take on new life, and since then it has continued to grow and to become an active and influential organization. It has apparently been chiefly useful to the farmer in a social way. "Grange Halls" have been built, and those have become centers of rural community life. There both afternoon and evening meetings are held from time to time, and such gatherings are usually attended by all the members of the farmer's family. Entertainment usually consists of programs which include singing and

speech-making; speakers from the University of Oregon, the Oregon Agricultural College, and elsewhere are often invited to address such meetings on topics of special interest to farmers and their families.

Every year members of local "Granges" attend a meeting of the "State Grange" at which methods and means of improving the condition of the farmers are discussed.



ADMINISTRATION BUILDING
University of Oregon at Eugene

The proposal of new laws that will benefit farmers is also made at such meetings, and steps are taken to bring such proposals before forthcoming sessions of the legislature. In 1924 there were two hundred one local "Granges" in the state; those had a membership of more than ten thousand. During that year the "Granges" collected and expended almost eighteen thousand dollars for furthering their activities.

The passing of the pioneer church. The coming of the Methodist, Presbyterian, and Roman Catholic missionaries and early preachers has already been narrated, and we have here only to learn of the further development of churches in our state. The passing years changed the churches as well as the schools. In 1848 there were only six churches in all Oregon. The Meth-

THE NORMAL TRAINING SCHOOL AT MONMOUTH

odist church, which was erected at Oregon City in 1844, was the oldest church structure in the state, if we except the log house on French Prairie in which Jason Lee first preached and which was afterward used by the Roman Catholics. The Roman Catholics and the Congregationalists also had churches at Oregon City at an early date, and the brick church structure now used by the Roman Catholics at St. Paul was built there as early as 1846. In 1848 there were Methodist churches at

Hillsboro and Salem, and soon thereafter the Baptists and Episcopalians became established in Oregon.

During the fifties religious work was carried on for the most part in the open country. Those were the days of the circuit riders, the picturesque figures who once brought religion to the most distant and lonely homesteads. But the early preachers have also disappeared; they have gone with the spirit and life of the frontier. With those religious teachers of the pioneer days, has gone, too, the church of the open country. In their places are the present city churches with resident pastors.

The church's part in social progress. The city church has, however, done splendid work in the cause of every reform. It has worked hard to establish the prohibition of the liquor traffic; it has exerted its energy in behalf of more humane treatment for the unfortunate classes; it has always interested itself in the welfare of children, and it was the first agency to establish homes for the care of orphans. The city church has done its full part in every work designed to make this world a better place in which to live.

The state's part in social progress. The state has not only established schools, which it supports, but it has also advanced the welfare of the people in other ways. It has at all times looked after the health of its citizens. It has taken measures to safeguard men, women, and children who are employed, and by a rigid system of inspection it labors to lessen the possibility of dangers from accident, so likely to occur in manufacturing establishments.

The state has also provided a system by which work-

ing people receive compensation for injuries sustained while engaged in labor. Formerly, those who were injured while working at their usual employment received no damages for injuries unless they were able to carry their complaints before the courts and there sue their employers. Frequently the families of injured workmen either went hungry or were dependent upon charity throughout the time that the wage-earner was recovering from his injuries. Even when the employer

AGRICULTURAL HALL
Oregon Agricultural College at Corvallis

was finally compelled to pay damages, the amount of money paid was often insufficient and unjustly small.

To remedy such a condition of affairs, the state legislature, in 1913, passed an act known as the "Workmen's Compensation Law." This law provides for the collection of a small sum from each employer who engages people to work at hazardous occupations, and also from each person engaged in such employment. So far as concerns the employer, the sum amounts to only a small percentage of the daily pay roll. Each worker pays one

cent a day. The money so obtained is placed in a fund used for paying injured workmen within a few days after they are hurt. The fund is administered by the Industrial Accident Commission, the members of which are appointed by the governor. Thus, delay in this important matter is avoided, payment is justly proportional to injuries received, and there is little likelihood of either the workman or his family becoming objects of public charity, even for a short time.

Promoting the welfare of children. Within a few years the school children of today will be the men and women who will be responsible for conducting the affairs of the state. Since this is true, the state uses every care to provide for the welfare of its future men and women by safeguarding them while they are yet children. This calls for the passage of laws relating to child welfare, and for the establishment of boards and commissions — groups of interested and capable men and women — to see that such laws are properly enforced. Such boards are usually appointed by the governor.

The duty of the health officers, who are to be found in almost every town and city, is plain to everyone. In addition to the health officers there are others whose duty it is to inspect foodstuffs, especially milk. Still other officers supervise factories and all other places where numbers of children are employed; too, they require factory owners and superintendents to provide sanitary and moral surroundings for their youthful employees.

Hospitals are provided for sickly children, homes for the feeble-minded and the orphans. Children who will-

fully and continually disobey their parents, and who make themselves objectionable by their continued misbehavior, must, to their great misfortune, be cared for in special institutions. The state provides all such needed places, and in each of them it maintains a school where just the proper sort of instruction is given. It also supports a special school for the deaf, established at Salem in 1872, and another for the blind, established in 1870

OREGON STATE HOSPITAL AT SALEM

near the same city. In such schools the unfortunate are given every opportunity to learn all they can, in spite of their afflictions, to make their lives happier. It is to the great credit of the children in most of the schools that the institutions are largely self-supporting.

In addition to the special schools supported by the state itself, there are others which are wholly or in part supported by churches and other social groups. To all the latter the state also contributes, because it feels that

it should do its share in providing for the care of the unfortunate, regardless of the agency that actually does the work of teaching and caring for these children.

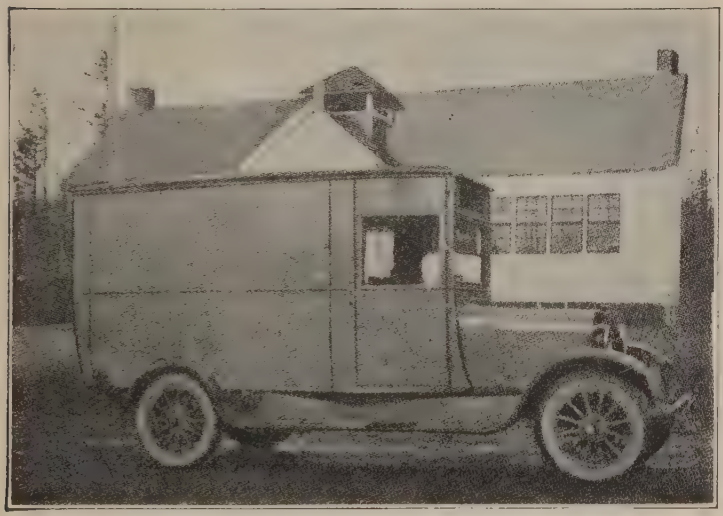
The Oregon State Soldiers' Home. The Nation, grateful to the men who have fought its wars, has given them land and pensions as an expression of its gratitude. It has provided homes, too, for such of them as have none other. One such home for soldiers is that maintained by the State of Oregon at Roseberg. There,

HOLLOW-TILE BUILDING AT HAYESVILLE, MARION COUNTY
Has two schoolrooms, a stage, a kitchen, and a library.

amidst pleasant surroundings, old comrades meet again to enjoy the society of one another, to re-live the days of the past, in memory and imagination to fight their battles again. There, the people of Oregon, grateful to those who have protected the country in war time, gladly furnish a good home to the men who otherwise might find themselves without comfort in their old age.

State promotion of historical information. In Oregon there are a number of societies devoted to the discovery and dissemination of information which relates

to the history of the state. The activities of several such organizations, chief among which is the Oregon Historical Society, are furthered by aid received from the state itself. The McLoughlin Memorial at Oregon City has for its chief aim the task of keeping alive the memory of Dr. John McLoughlin and of the great work which he did for this region in the early days.



RURAL BOOK SERVICE OF THE MULTNOMAH COUNTY LIBRARY

The Oregon Humane Society also receives aid from the state, although its task differs greatly from those of the two organizations mentioned above. The object of The Humane Society is to prevent cruelty to horses, dogs, and other animals. It does a worthy work. The Social Hygiene Society, whose aim is to teach school children to care for their personal health so that

they may grow to have capable minds and strong bodies, also receives aid from the state.

The Oregon State Library. The act establishing the government of Oregon Territory, which was passed by Congress in 1848, included the appropriation of five thousand dollars for the establishment of a library. The library thus begun was burned in the fire that destroyed the capitol building in 1855. The State Library is now housed in the Supreme Court Building, at Salem, but it is no longer a part of the Supreme Court Library.

The State Library does an important work for the people of Oregon. Books are lent to citizens upon request; more than eighteen thousand persons borrowed books in 1924. During the same year the State Library sent out eight hundred free traveling libraries to rural communities which are too small to support libraries of their own. The State Library also selects books for the 2,321 school districts of the state, and lends them books as well. All this work is done for a sum which is in itself only a small item in the total cost of state government, as the appropriation of thirty-seven thousand five hundred dollars for the year 1925 well proves.

In addition to the State Library, designed to serve the state as a whole, there is a county library in many counties of the state. Those number ten in all, of which the Multnomah County Library is the largest. Each of fifty-three cities maintains a free library.

ADDITIONAL READINGS

Carey, C. H. *History of Oregon.* Chap. 38.
Schafer, Joseph. *History of the Pacific Northwest.* Chaps. 15 and 20.

The Oregon Blue Book. (Latest edition.)

The *Biennial Report of the Oregon State Library,* which is published in odd years, gives a very interesting account of one of the most important educational activities of the state.

QUESTIONS

1. What is meant by the term "social progress"?
2. Who taught the first school in Oregon? Where was the school located?
3. Why did the schools at first grow so slowly?
4. How much land was set aside for school purposes?
5. How was much of the school land lost to the state?
6. Why have more subjects been added to the list of those that were taught in early days?
7. Locate the principal academies and higher schools of pioneer times.
8. What caused the decline of the academies?
9. Is there a "Grange" in your locality? How does it contribute to the social life of the community?
10. Aside from religious teaching, what important social work is done by the churches?
11. How is your school aided by the Oregon State Library?
12. On what terms does an injured workman now receive damages for his injury?
13. In how many ways does the state protect its children from injury?
14. Why does the state try to care for its children?

CHAPTER XVIII

EARLY INDUSTRIAL PROGRESS IN OREGON

THE period between the first coming of the white settlers and the year 1870 was marked by great progress in the industrial life of Oregon. In this chapter we shall give an account of that progress and show the changes that have taken place in the economic life of the region. The occupations of the people, the growth of agriculture, and the beginnings of manufacturing will be discussed, for as those occupations have constantly offered greater opportunities to greater numbers of people, the settled area has expanded, population has increased, and towns and cities have grown up.

Oregon's earliest economic interest: Furs. As we have seen, the first white men were attracted to the Oregon Country because it abounded in fur-bearing animals. At the height of its prosperity the Hudson's Bay Company sent out annually a cargo of furs that brought from five hundred thousand dollars to a million dollars, when sold in London.

The beginnings of agriculture and industry. The first farms in the Oregon Country were owned by the Hudson's Bay Company. Those were located in the vicinity of all their important forts, and the Company also farmed on an extensive scale at Nisqually on Puget Sound, and along the Cowlitz River. At Fort Van-

couver, in addition to a three thousand acre farm, there were flour and lumber mills owned by the Company, and salmon was there cured for export. Flour, butter, and other provisions, the product of Company farms, were shipped to the Russian trading posts in Alaska. Pickled

SALMON FISHING ON THE COLUMBIA RIVER

salmon and lumber were sent to the Hawaiian Islands there to be exchanged for sugar and salt. This trade alone was worth sixty thousand dollars a year. Thousands of cattle, horses, sheep, and hogs were kept near the Company's fort at Vancouver, and on the farms to the north, and there, as has already been explained, agri-

cultural and other industrial enterprises were conducted on a large scale.

The Hudson's Bay Company buys wheat. Most of the early Oregon settlers were farmers, even the missionaries being engaged in that industry. Although each farm usually furnished the necessary food for the family, some things had to be secured elsewhere. Farming implements, utensils made of iron and copper, some clothing, sugar, salt, and other articles which could not be produced upon the farm had to be purchased at trading posts. The farmer, therefore, had to raise a surplus of produce that could be exchanged for such necessities. In early times wheat was the main crop — as it continues to be in some sections. It supplied the required surplus produce. The skins obtained by trapping during the winter also furnished a commodity that could be sold or exchanged for necessities.

Many of the settlers were able to get a start on their farms in the Willamette Valley because the Hudson's Bay Company advanced seed wheat and other supplies to them. That is, the farmers were given credit for the things needed, until they could grow a crop. After the grain was harvested, the surplus was delivered to a warehouse of the Company located on the Willamette River. The farmer received credit on the Company's books at the usual rate of sixty-two and a half cents a bushel for the wheat he delivered. Little or no money was in circulation in those early days, since wheat and other farm produce was exchanged for needed supplies. Provisions and supplies most in demand could be secured at Fort Vancouver and, after 1844, at the Company's store in

Oregon City. Without this ready market for their wheat, the first pioneers would have been unable to sell it at all. In 1845, Americans in Oregon owed the Hudson's Bay Company debts amounting to thirty thousand dollars. For the most part such debts were paid for in pelts and grain. The wheat bought from the settlers was sent in the Company's own ships to Alaska and the Hawaiian Islands where it found a ready market.

An overproduction of wheat. Each year as the immigrations from the East brought thousands of settlers to Oregon, the farmers already established were benefited by the demand for provisions to feed the newcomers. On this account the price of wheat gradually increased, until, by 1845, it was selling for a dollar and a half a bushel. Gradually, however, as the number of farms increased, more wheat was produced each year. Finally the limited market offered by Russian Alaska, the Hawaiian Islands, and local buyers could not absorb the supply. In 1846 the settlers produced a hundred fifty thousand bushels of wheat and as a result the price declined. In 1848 the time seemed close at hand when Oregon would be without a market for her surplus grain. A fortunate occurrence, the discovery of gold in California, spared the settlers that calamity and brought prosperity to them instead.

The building of lumber and flour mills. The Russians of Alaska and the people of the Hawaiian Islands not only demanded Oregon wheat, butter, and salmon, but they also asked for lumber, shingles, and flour. The early settlers needed mills to grind their wheat into flour, and to cut their timber into lumber from which to build

houses more comfortable than the first log cabins had been. Even before the arrival of the Americans the Hudson's Bay Company had erected a sawmill at Fort Vancouver, to cut timber for Company use and to meet the demand of the Russian and Hawaiian trade. To provide for the needs of the Willamette Valley settlers, Dr. John McLoughlin built a sawmill at Oregon City in 1844. Soon thereafter mills were constructed elsewhere, and by 1848 fifteen sawmills had been built.

In 1828 the Hudson's Bay Company built the first flour mill at a point now known as Mill Plain, located just north of the present site of Vancouver, Washington. Indian ponies were used for motive power. In 1835 the first mill driven by water power was built near Fort Vancouver. The burrstones for crushing the grain were brought to the settlement on a sailing ship which came around Cape Horn. In 1836 the first flour was shipped from Oregon to Alaska, and at about that same time a mill was built north of the present site of Spokane, at Fort Colville. The first mill south of the Columbia River was erected at Forest Grove in 1844. About a year later another mill was built at Rickreall and from there flour was sent by pack train to the California mining camps. Dr. Whitman also built a flour mill at his mission, and by 1848 nine mills had been built throughout the Oregon Country. Some brick were also manufactured in the region. A few houses and the Roman Catholic church at St. Paul were constructed of brick.

Oregon attracts few traders. Not many American vessels came to Oregon before 1848. During the fourteen years preceding that date only five vessels had ar-

rived with stocks of goods to sell. Most of the commerce of the country was carried on by the Hudson's Bay Company; they used their own ships to transport the articles of trade. No trading vessel from the Atlantic touched an Oregon port in 1846, although three thousand immigrants had arrived during the preceding year. Flour sold for ten to fifteen dollars a barrel in the Hawaiian Islands,

From an Old Print

THE BEAVER: STEAMER OF THE HUDSON'S BAY COMPANY

and that trade alone amounted to more than fifty-four thousand dollars in 1848. Lack of a market was due in part to the fact that there were so few ships in which to send produce away from the region.

High prices of the early days. In the early years settlers were forced to pay very high prices for everything they had to buy at the trading posts and stores. Cast-iron plows sold for forty-five dollars apiece; nails from twenty cents to twenty-five cents a pound; axes

sold for six dollars each and crosscut saws cost as much as twelve dollars apiece. Groceries, too, were expensive. Coffee cost fifty cents a pound, tea a dollar and a half a pound, coarse sugar twelve cents to fifteen cents a pound, and common molasses fifty cents a gallon. Common split leather shoes sold for five dollars a pair. Spelling books that sold for twenty-five cents apiece in the East cost a dollar apiece in Oregon. Such prices for

From an Old Print

OREGON CITY IN 1845

school books caused the settlers to complain that their children were growing up in ignorance because they could not afford to pay such prices for textbooks. Prices of all the articles mentioned were three to four times higher than the prices of similar articles bought in the states of the Mississippi Valley.

Growth of towns before 1848. With the increase of population, commercial centers other than the fur-trading posts grew up around stores, mills, and wheat

warehouses. Those brought people to a common center and made the beginnings of towns. Oregon City, located at the falls of the Willamette River where abundant power was available to turn the wheels of the mills, was the first town of importance. Dr. McLoughlin had taken up a claim there, and in 1842 he laid out the site as a town. He sold the first lots that year, and by 1846 there were seventy houses and five hundred people in Oregon City.

Many other places laid out at about that time aspired to become cities. Linnton, at the mouth of the Willamette River, Milwaukie, St. Johns, St. Helens, Milton, Canemah, Multnomah City, Linn City, Hillsboro, Lafayette, Champoeg, and Butteville were started at that time, each with the hope of becoming the great city of the Oregon Country. In 1846 a few houses had been built at Salem. Portland, surveyed in 1845, had only two frame buildings and some log houses in 1848.

Settlements on the upper Willamette River. Gradually, as population increased, new towns were founded along the Willamette River. The more important of those were in time to become the capital cities of new counties. One was Corvallis, founded in 1846 and first called Avery after its founder; later it was known as Marysville and finally it was given its present name. Others were Albany, founded in 1848, and Eugene City, founded in 1847 by Eugene Skinner on the site of his donation land claim. In 1850 the region south of Marion County had a population of about eighteen hundred. Three counties were organized from that section; they were Benton and Linn, organized in 1847, and Lane, which became a county in 1851.

Gold is discovered in California. About the end of July, 1848, a little schooner named the *Honolulu* sailed into the Columbia River and made its way up to Portland. The captain seemed in a great hurry to unload his cargo. So soon as the boat had been emptied it was quickly reloaded with all the meat and flour that it could hold. And the captain also bought every pick, shovel, and pan which he could find in the town. When the *Honolulu* was ready to sail, its captain told that in January a former Oregonian, James W. Marshall, had discovered gold in California. Other vessels soon arrived and confirmed that news.

Gold-seekers rush to California. At once almost every able-bodied man who could possibly leave home went off to the California mines. Pack trains and wagon trains were soon on the way to the gold fields; it is said that two-thirds of the men in Oregon set out for California at that time. Only women, children, and old men were left, some places being almost deserted. Five old men remained in Salem. All this happened just at harvest time, and to the women fell the work of getting in the grain as best they could. Much of it was never harvested. The only two newspapers in the territory, the *Oregon Spectator* and the *Free Press*, were obliged to discontinue publication for lack of printers.

Oregon benefits by the discovery of gold. Most of the men who went to California in search of gold were easily satisfied. Fortunes in gold dust were quickly picked out of the streams, and in the spring of 1849 many began to return to their homes. Every boat that entered the Columbia River carried those exiles, who

were now anxious to reach their wives and children. Some of them returned with as much as thirty thousand dollars to forty thousand dollars in gold dust and nuggets. This money was much needed. Now debts were paid, improvements were made on the farms, and better houses were built.

California buys Oregon products. Greater wealth than that brought back by the returning miners came to Oregon through the exchange of her agricultural products for the gold of California. The most important result of the gold discovery and the great increase of population in California was to furnish a market for lumber, flour, bacon, and other products of Oregon. The increasing thousands of miners who went to the California gold fields created a steady demand for the produce of the Oregon farms.

Before that time, as we have learned, few vessels came to Oregon. Now they came in fleets to carry away the products of farm and mill. Portland became a thriving port. Wheat rose in price to two dollars and two dollars and a half a bushel; flour sold for twenty dollars to twenty-five dollars a barrel. As late as 1853 four bushels of Oregon apples sold in San Francisco for five hundred dollars, and the following year forty bushels brought two thousand five hundred dollars. Of course prices did not remain at such a high point, but so long as mining continued to be the chief interest of Californians there was a steady demand for Oregon products.

Lack of money in early Oregon. Up to that time there had been little money in the Oregon Country. Indeed, there had been but little use for it, since the people

bartered what they had to exchange, and beaver skins, wheat, and bacon served as money. Now gold dust took the place of those articles. It was not a convenient kind of money like the coins and bills which we now have. The gold dust had to be weighed on very accurate scales. It was worth sixteen dollars an ounce, but merchants were willing to allow only eleven dollars an ounce for it. This caused so much discontent that the Provisional Legislature, in 1849, passed a law which established a mint for coining gold pieces. Before the mint could be put into operation, Oregon became a territory and then it no longer had the right to coin money.

A private concern called The Oregon Exchange Company then issued coins of five dollars and ten dollars in value. Those bore the design of a beaver on one side, and were consequently known as beaver money. Some fifty thousand dollars of that money was issued. Soon a United States mint was established at San Francisco, and then plenty of coins were brought to Oregon. Those were then used to purchase supplies.

The settlement of southern Oregon. The discovery of gold in California hastened the settlement of southern Oregon. In 1846 a road was opened by way of the Umpqua and Rogue river valleys to join the Oregon-California Trail. Some of the immigrants of 1846 reached the Willamette Valley by that route. After that road had been built and immigrants had begun to use it, the southern Oregon country became known and settlers began to go to the region. The first claim was taken up near Drain in 1847; in 1849 Jesse Applegate settled in the Yoncalla Valley.

Presently new mines were discovered in the Siskiyou Mountains of northern California, and the miners of that region were also supplied with flour, meat, and other necessities sent by pack train from the Oregon settlements. That mining region became more accessible after towns grew up along the southern Oregon coast. Scottsburg, near the head of tidewater on the Umpqua River, was laid out as a town in 1850; it became the outfitting station for the pack trains which carried supplies to the mines of northern California. Port Orford was founded in 1851.

The discovery of gold in southern Oregon. The discovery of gold in California led people to search for the precious metal throughout Oregon. The packers who passed through the Rogue River Valley discovered gold in the bed of that stream in 1851. The next year they found rich deposits near the present site of Jacksonville. In the same year gold was also discovered on the beaches near the mouth of Rogue River. Those discoveries brought a great rush of miners into Oregon, and thriving mining settlements sprang up in many localities. Jacksonville was the most important of those. Scottsburg soon became a prosperous commercial town. Ships brought produce up the Umpqua River to Scottsburg and from there it was carried overland by pack train to the mines. Permanent settlements were made on farm lands along the route to the mines, since there was a profitable market for all produce. The raising of live stock, especially sheep, became an important industry. Soon flour mills and sawmills were built. In 1852 Scottsburg had fifteen concerns engaged in whole-

sale and retail trade. A weekly newspaper was issued there. Other towns — Elkton, Winchester, and Roseburg — were founded in the upper Umpqua River region. Congress made appropriations to provide for the establishment of a mail service by sea and land, a lighthouse on Winchester Bay, and a military road.

Counties are organized in southern Oregon. The settlement of southern Oregon led to the formation of Umpqua County in 1851. The county included all the territory lying between the Calapooia Mountains and the northern boundary of California. At that time most of the settlements were along the coast. The next year the upper Umpqua River country was made a separate county; it was named Douglas, and the town of Winchester was made the county seat. With the growth of other sections of southern Oregon, new counties were formed; among them were Jackson, organized in 1852; Coos, in 1853; Curry, in 1855; and Josephine, in 1856. The lower Umpqua River region lost its trade with the mines and declined in population to such an extent that in 1862 it was merged with Douglas County. Umpqua County then no longer had a separate existence.

As a result of the settlement of southern Oregon there were many serious and bloody conflicts with the Indians of that region. The Rogue River War, 1853 to 1855, was the most important. Miners and settlers were not free from attack by the Indians, however, until the latter were finally removed to reservations.

The growth of Oregon's population. For a few years after the discovery of gold in California the tide of immigration turned away from Oregon to that region.

In 1847 nearly five thousand people had come to Oregon; the next year the number of immigrants fell to seven hundred, and in 1849 there were only four hundred arrivals. A census of the Territory, taken in 1849, showed a population of more than nine thousand persons.

After the passage of the Donation Land Law in 1850 the number of immigrants again began to increase. About two thousand came to Oregon in 1850. The national census of that year gave the Territory a population of some thirteen thousand persons. By 1860 the population had increased to fifty-two thousand, which was a yearly increase of almost four thousand. During the next ten years, from 1860 to 1870, the population of the state continued to grow at about the same rate as in the previous decade. It reached ninety-one thousand in 1870.

The growth of eastern Oregon. Until about 1860 the settlement of the Oregon Country was confined to the region between the Cascade Mountains and the Pacific Ocean. The settlements within Oregon proper were confined to the Willamette Valley and southern Oregon districts, although there were a few along the coast. Two-thirds of the territory, that lying east of the Cascade Mountains, was still unoccupied.

The presence of the Indians and their hostility to white settlers hindered the development of eastern Oregon after the Whitman Massacre. Furthermore, much of the country seemed desert and barren. It was unfit for agriculture and without markets for surplus produce. During the fifties treaties that opened some of those lands to settlement were made with the Indians. Soon

after the treaties were made gold was discovered in that section and settlement began at once. The first important discoveries of gold were made in Idaho in 1860, and the next year valuable mines were found along the John Day and Powder rivers. One of those claims yielded six thousand dollars in four days: one pan of ore contained a hundred fifty dollars worth of gold. For a few years the mines of eastern Oregon yielded gold

PACIFIC HIGHWAY BRIDGE OVER THE ROGUE RIVER

at the rate of two million dollars annually, while those of Idaho averaged about eight million dollars each year.

Growth of towns in eastern Oregon. The stories of such riches caused miners literally to swarm into the region. By 1865 there were fifty thousand people engaged in mining in Idaho, eastern Washington, and eastern Oregon; mining towns sprang up almost in a night. So soon as the mines were exhausted the miners removed to other locations and many of the towns declined and

disappeared. Such was the case with Auburn, a mining town that grew up on Powder River and became the county seat of Baker County in 1862. Within a few years Auburn was completely abandoned.

The increase of the mining population created a demand for all sorts of food products and encouraged the development of farming. Permanent settlements were made in the valleys of the Walla Walla, Umatilla, Grand Ronde, John Day, and Powder rivers, and in other parts of eastern Oregon. La Grande was founded in 1861, grew rapidly for a few years, and became the county seat of Union County, which was organized in 1864. La Grande had the advantage of being on the immigrant road which gave it easy access to the Columbia River. In 1870 the population of La Grande was six hundred forty. Two other counties were formed in eastern Oregon at that time: Umatilla County, organized in 1862, and Grant County, organized in 1864. Those four counties — Baker, Union, Umatilla, and Grant — had a population of about ten thousand in 1870. Almost all the settlers had entered the region since 1859. Other towns founded at about that time were Granite, John Day, Union, Canyon City, Meadows, Umatilla, Weston, and Cove. Pendleton, founded in 1868, had a population of two hundred forty-three in 1870. By that time those four eastern Oregon counties were producing a hundred thousand bushels of wheat and more than twice that amount of oats and barley each year.

Portland and other Columbia River towns. Portland was laid out as a town in 1845; it had a population of about three hundred in 1850. The California trade

stimulated its growth, and after the discovery of gold in the eastern Oregon and Idaho country Portland prospered because it carried on a thriving trade with the camps and settlements up the river. The Oregon Steam Navigation Company ran its boats up the Columbia River from Portland. The vessels carried goods and passen-

From an Old Print

PORTLAND, OREGON, IN 1851

gers as far as old Fort Walla Walla, then, as now, called Wallula. The boats of this line carried thirty-six thousand passengers and more than twenty-one thousand tons of freight up the Columbia River in 1864. In one single year, 1866, eight million dollars worth of gold was shipped from Portland. The Dalles became an outfitting center for the John Day Valley; Umatilla supplied pack trains for Powder River, Owyhee, Boise Basin, and other

places in eastern Oregon and southern Idaho; Walla Walla sent its pack trains to those camps and to those of the upper Columbia River and northern Idaho regions. The Dalles increased in population from about eight hundred in 1860 to two thousand two hundred in 1870, and by that time Portland had grown to be a city of nine thousand people.

The growth of manufacturing. The principal industries developed in Oregon by 1870 were salmon fishing and canning, woolen spinning and weaving, flour milling, and lumbering. An iron mine having a furnace and a foundry had already been opened at Oswego, and a paper mill had been built at Oregon City. There was a linseed oil mill at Salem, and mills for the manufacture of linen cloth had been erected at Salem and Albany. In 1874 the governor of Oregon said in his message to the legislature: "The value of our exports has reached a sum certainly exceeding ten millions of dollars. I estimate the export value of our wheat and flour at nearly four millions, gold; of oats, other grain, and fruits at one million; of wool, hides, meats, cattle, and horses at two millions; of salmon at one million five hundred thousand; of timber and coal at one million; of gold, silver, and iron at one million five hundred thousand. This exhibit for a population of one hundred thousand people is almost without a parallel." Thus did the hope of wealth bring people to work in the mines, to engage in agricultural industries of every kind, and to establish manufactures in that great region where only a few years before fur-gathering had been the white man's only occupation.

ADDITIONAL READINGS

CAREY, C. H. *History of Oregon*, pp. 751-787.
SCHAFER, JOSEPH. *History of the Pacific Northwest*, pp. 198-206.

QUESTIONS

1. Name the industries established and operated by the Hudson's Bay Company.
2. How did the presence of the Hudson's Bay Company in the Oregon Country further the settlement of the region?
3. List the articles which settlers purchased from the stores of the Hudson's Bay Company.
4. Compare the prices paid for the articles mentioned with the prices paid today. Why did prices seem so high to the early settlers?
5. What first caused white people to come into the section where you live? Was it a good farming region? Was it a mining region?
6. How did the discovery of gold in California further the progress of Oregon? How did it hinder Oregon's development for a time?
7. In what way did mining further the permanent and more rapid settlement of Oregon?
8. If you live in a mining region, have some old settler tell you the story of one of the mining towns. Have someone tell you about the founding of your own town.
9. Name the important industries in which the people of Oregon were engaged in 1870.
10. What was the most important occupation of the Oregon settlers in 1874, as shown by the value of the exports?

CHAPTER XIX

OREGON AS A STATE: 1859-1924

OREGON Territory had increased in population to such an extent, and had grown so important economically, that at last it was entitled to a place among the states; therefore, by act of Congress, it was admitted to the Union on February 14, 1859. In preparation for statehood a constitution had been approved by the people of the territory as early as 1857, and officers provided for by the constitution had been elected the following year. Consequently, when the notification of admission reached them, those officers simply assumed their duties and Oregon's career as a state began.

The state government of Oregon. The form of government in Oregon, as it was adopted in 1859, was quite like that of the other states, nor has it greatly changed since. The executive or law-enforcing part of the government includes a governor, a secretary, and a treasurer, each elected for four years. The legislative or lawmaking body is composed of an assembly that has two branches or houses. The members of one of these, thirty in number, constitute the senate; they are elected for four years. The other branch, the house of representatives, has sixty members who are elected for two years. The constitution establishing the state government also provides for circuit courts and a state supreme court, judges for which are elected by the people.

As a territory Oregon was represented in Congress by only a territorial delegate. That official could speak but he had no vote. As a state, it secured at the outset three representatives — two senators and one congressman. Additional representatives have been allowed as population has increased. In 1891 a second congressman was allowed, and in 1911, a third. Congressmen are

CAPITOL BUILDING AT SALEM

elected from congressional districts, which consist of groups of counties. Each congressional district sends one representative to Congress.

County government in Oregon. At present the state is divided into thirty-six counties. The division into counties was not made at one time. During the period of provisional government Oregon was divided into four districts. Two of those, Yamhill and Tuality, were on the western side of the Willamette River. The

other two, Clackamas and Champoeg, were on the eastern side. Tuality later became Washington County, and Champoeg, Marion County. Other Willamette Valley counties were soon carved out of those, as population increased and settlements pushed further away from the older inhabited region. Wasco, the first eastern Oregon county, was organized in 1854. Afterward others were gradually formed in the eastern section of the state as it became more densely settled. Each county has its own government and its own officers — commissioners, county judge, sheriff, and clerk.

City government in Oregon. As towns were gradually established, and as they increased in population, city governments were organized. The first town of any importance in Oregon was Oregon City which in 1846 had a population of five hundred poeple. Dr. John McLoughlin was one of its early mayors.

The chief officers of city government are a mayor, a recorder, a treasurer, and the councilmen. Within recent years some cities have changed from the council form of government to the commission government or the city-manager plan.

Electing the officers of government. The citizens of the state have an important part to play in the conduct of government, since they must elect all officers. From 1858 until 1910 state elections were held in June of each even-numbered year. Since 1910 all regular elections, except those of school officers, have been held in November of such years. Until 1912 only men over twenty-one years of age were permitted to vote, but in that year women were given the same privilege.

Dissatisfaction with early plan of voting. A law of 1854 provided for the *viva voce* method of voting. Under that plan the voter came before the election judges and spoke aloud the name of the man for whom he wished to vote, or he handed in a ticket on which was written the name of his choice. The vote was then cried out by the election judge and noted by the election clerk in the presence and hearing of all the voters. Since by

OREGON STATE SCHOOL FOR THE BLIND

that plan every man knew how his neighbor voted, there was often much disorder on election day. The election day at St. Helens in 1862 is thus described by an eye-witness: "We had a jolly time on the day of election. There were about forty fights, sixty-seven shirts badly torn, thirty-six bloody noses, twenty-four black eyes, eighteen backs dusted, a hundred forty buttons lost, twelve pairs of suspenders bursted, eight kegs of beer and nineteen gallons of whisky consumed; the ground

was considerably torn up; there were, besides, innumerable scratches, kicks, and bites, as the result of the day's disturbance." In 1891 the *viva voce* method was discontinued in favor of the present plan of voting by secret ballot.

The rise of political parties. Since men do not always agree concerning policies of government or the enactment of laws, political parties have developed. Each party seeks to secure the election of its own men to office; therefore it names or nominates only one candidate for each office to be filled. When Oregon became a territory, party meetings, or conventions, were called to name candidates for the various offices. At that time the national parties — that is, the parties by which presidents and vice-presidents are nominated and elected — were the Whig party and the Democratic party. The people who came to Oregon usually belonged to one or the other of those parties, and voted for Whig or Democratic candidates in the states from which they came. Consequently, after settling in Oregon, they continued to think of themselves as either Whigs or Democrats. The territorial governors were either Democrats or Whigs because the governor naturally belonged to the party represented by the President who appointed him. The first territorial governor, Joseph Lane, was a Democrat; he was succeeded by John P. Gaines, a Whig, who was appointed by the Whig President, Zachary Taylor.

Political parties in Oregon. By 1852 the two great national parties were well organized in Oregon and were seriously engaged in a conflict to elect members of the legislature and the territorial delegate. In those struggles

the Democrats were usually successful. Joseph Lane, after serving as governor, was elected Democratic territorial delegate to Congress at each election from 1850 to 1858. Newspapers were founded to champion the cause of one party or the other and to support its candidates for office. *The Oregonian,* a Whig newspaper, was first issued in December, 1850. The next year *The Oregon*

A HIGHWAY SCENE IN DOUGLAS COUNTY

Statesman, a Democratic newspaper, was published. Up to the time that Oregon became a state the majority of the people in the territory were Democrats. This was true because many of the settlers had come from Iowa, Missouri, and the other newer states of the Middle West where the people were followers of Andrew Jackson and members of the party he founded. The first state governor, John Whiteaker, and the first United States senators and representatives were also Democrats.

The slavery question in Oregon. In 1854 a new political party, a party opposed to the extension of negro slavery into new territory, was established in the United States. It was called the Republican party. Two years later, in 1856, steps were taken in Oregon to organize a branch of the new party there. Although the majority of the people of Oregon had come from states where slavery was permitted, most of them were opposed to introducing slavery into Oregon. In consequence they voted against permitting negroes, either slave or free, to come into the state. The newly founded Republican party drew to its ranks the anti-slavery men from both the old parties. The Whigs soon disappeared entirely, and the Democrats were greatly weakened by division over the question of slavery. In 1860 there were two Democratic candidates for President, and as that divided the Democratic vote, the result was that the Republicans carried Oregon for Abraham Lincoln, their presidential candidate at the time.

The Republican and Union parties. When Lincoln became President in 1861, some of the slave-holding states wished to secede or withdraw from the Union because they feared that the new President and his party would attempt to abolish slavery. President Lincoln and the majority of the people in the North denied the right of any state to secede. The result was the Civil War between the North and the South. Again the people of Oregon were divided; this time the question was whether or not the southern states did have a right to withdraw from the Union. A great many people in Oregon sympathized with the seceding South, while others

were equally strong for the preservation of the Union as an undivided people. This difference of opinion separated the Democratic party into two groups. The result was that the Republican party again gained in numbers, and in 1862 elected the governor and other state officers. As the Civil War continued, to many men party loyalty seemed less important than saving the Nation;

OREGON STATE INDUSTRIAL SCHOOL FOR GIRLS

therefore an effort was made to draw men into a new party that stood for the preservation of the Union. In the election of 1864 the name *Republican* was dropped, and all who favored carrying on the war until the seceding states were defeated came together to form the Union party. Lincoln, the Union party candidate for President, was elected in 1864. He received the vote of Oregon. In 1866 the Union party elected the governor, George L. Woods, and the other state officers.

Oregon during the Civil War. During the years of the Civil War Oregon was troubled by the Indian wars which have already been described. Although feeling ran high between those who sympathized with the North and with the South, Oregon was too remote from the region where the war was raging to feel its effects to any great extent. Nevertheless some adventurous young men enlisted in each of the armies. One of Oregon's senators, E. D. Baker, was killed at the Battle of Ball's Bluff in 1861. During that period many people came to Oregon from Missouri and other states which were the battlegrounds of the Northern and Southern armies. As a result of that immigration the population of eastern Oregon increased. In 1864, two new counties, Union and Grant, were organized from the region settled largely by those people.

The Democrats resume control. With the close of the Civil War, the Democrats who had joined the Union party began to return to their former allegiance. In the presidential election of 1868 the vote of Oregon was given by a small majority to the Democratic candidate, Horatio Seymour. In 1870 the Democrats elected Lafayette Grover as governor, and also secured a majority of the members of the legislature. Those Democratic victories put an end to the Union party, which in 1868 was called the Union-Republican party. By the year 1870 the name *Union* had been dropped, and since then the party has been known simply as Republican. Under that name it has constantly been the chief opponent of the Democratic party, and one of the two most influential national political organizations.

Later party history of Oregon. In the election of governors the Democrats have been successful more frequently than have the Republicans, as they have elected ten of the seventeen governors who have held office since 1858. Even so, the steadily increasing immigration from Northern, or Republican states, has greatly increased the vote of the Republican party in Oregon.

In national elections the state has usually cast its vote for the Republican candidates. This has been shown by presidential elections and by the frequent election of Republicans as United States senators and congressmen. Only twice since Oregon became a state has its vote been cast for a Democratic president — in 1868 and in 1912. In the latter year the vote went to Woodrow Wilson because there was dissension in the Republican party, and in consequence the voters of that party were divided.

Sixteen out of twenty-six United States Senators whom Oregon has sent to Congress have been Republicans, while there has been only one Democratic representative in Congress from this state since 1881. That was Congressman Elton Watkins, from Multnomah County, who was elected in 1922. In 1920 the vote of Oregon was given to the Republican candidate for President by fifty thousand majority. However, in the state election of 1922, the Democratic candidate, Walter Pierce was elected governor by more than thirty thousand majority. The registered Republican vote in 1922 was more than two hundred thousand, while that of the Democrats was only about eighty-five thousand. Though a Democratic candidate for governor may be successful, the other state

officers elected with him, and the majority of the legislative assembly, are usually members of the opposite political party. This indicates that in state affairs the voter is influenced by the character and personality of the candidate, or by the candidate's stand on some local question, rather than by the ties of party. In national elections, however, most voters are likely to vote for the candidate of the party to which they belong.

SCENE ON THE COLUMBIA RIVER HIGHWAY

Grievances of the Oregon farmers. From time to time the farmers of Oregon, like those elsewhere, have had their grievances. They have frequently suffered losses through a decline in the price of agricultural products. Just after the Civil War wheat sold for fifty cents a bushel. The farmers considered that a very low price, and they believed that it was due to the excessive freight rates which they were obliged to pay for the transporta-

tion of their grain to Portland. They also believed that the commission men who bought up the grain and shipped it to foreign markets were making an excessive profit at the farmer's expense.

Those grievances and others led the Oregon farmers to join an organization properly known as the "Patrons of Husbandry," though commonly called the "Grange," which was first promoted in the state in 1873. The members of the "Grange" formed coöperative associations for selling their grain, for building warehouses in which to store it, and for constructing vessels in which to carry their produce to Astoria. In that way they expected to avoid paying their profits to commission men and river transportation companies. The undertakings of the "Grange" were not successful, however, largely because of the farmers' lack of business experience.

Farmers' political parties. The "Grange" was not a political organization; its sole purpose was to offer a way by which the farmers should be able to improve their condition. They came together to discuss their problems and to plan methods of coöperation. The "Grange" nominated nobody for political office nor did its members seek to obtain control of the government. Many of its members, however, believed that the farmers should have a party of their own, and that they should try to elect the governor, the other state officers, and the members of the legislative assembly. In that way, they thought, they could secure laws to protect their interests.

An "Independent Party" was organized in 1873. It nominated candidates for the elections of the following

year, and succeeded in electing some of its candidates to the legislative assembly. The Independent party soon disappeared, however, and the Populist party later took its place. It appealed to the farmers, who joined it in great numbers. By combining with the Democrats, in 1886 and 1894, they twice elected Sylvester Pennoyer as governor. The Populist party, too, soon died out, and the farmers returned to one or the other of the old parties. Later efforts to draw the farmers into new political organizations have not met with much success.

Changes in the state government. Since the admission of Oregon Territory to the Union in 1859, some changes have been made in the machinery of state government, and many new offices, both elective and appointive, have been established. At first only the governor, secretary of state, and treasurer were elected by the people. Now the voters elect all those and in addition a superintendent of public instruction, an attorney general, a dairy and food commissioner, a labor commissioner, and three public service commissioners. A state engineer, insurance commissioner, market agent, master fish warden, game warden, health officer, printer, prohibition commissioner, superintendent of banks, and sealer of weights and measures are appointed. Besides the above officials there are sixty-four boards and commissions of various kinds, the most important of which is the state highway commission. This body has supervised the construction of Oregon's fine system of public highways on which it has expended some forty million dollars. The money has been obtained by the sale of bonds, by a tax on gasoline, and by a system of charging

licensing fees to automobile owners. The officers and commissions now at work show clearly how much more the state government attempts to do now than sixty years ago.

The "Oregon System" of government. The most important changes in Oregon's state government have been brought about through the establishment of the "Oregon System" of initiative, referendum, direct primary, and recall. These reforms were first demanded by the Populist party and in part may be credited to its influence. Agitation for the reforms began about 1890; their most vigorous champion was William S. U'Ren who lived at Milwaukie, in Clackamas County. He founded an organization known as the "People's Power League," whose aim was to work for the reforms. He and other men who supported the reforms were elected to the legislative assembly where they worked to have a constitutional amendment making provision for the initiative and referendum submitted to a vote of the people.

By securing the initiative the people can make laws without waiting for the legislative assembly to act. Through the referendum they can prevent that body from passing undesirable laws. About 1890 the legislative assembly was not all that could be desired of a lawmaking body. At that time United States senators were elected by the legislative assembly. This election often absorbed the attention of the legislators to the exclusion of other business. In 1897 the assembly was prevented from organizing by the men who opposed the reelection of Senator John Mitchell, and so transacted no

legislative business whatsoever. The railroads and other corporations seemed to many people to exercise too much influence in the making of the laws. These conditions finally caused the citizens to demand that United States senators be elected by direct vote of the people, and that there be established a check on the making of laws by the legislature. An amendment to the constitution provid-

PORTLAND WITH MOUNT HOOD IN THE BACKGROUND

ing for the initiative and referendum, which gave the people more control over its officers, was submitted to the people in 1902 and adopted by a vote of eleven to one.

The initiative and referendum at work. By means of the initiative, proposed laws are placed on the ballot sheet upon petition by the voters. At the election a "yes" or "no" vote is given, and the majority of votes decides the fate of the proposed law. In the same way,

by means of the referendum, a bill already passed by the legislative assembly is placed on the ballot sheet for the approval or disapproval of the voters. Since 1902 more than a hundred thirty proposed laws have been submitted to the people. They gave their approval to less than half of them.

The direct primary. In 1904 the direct primary was adopted as an additional means by which the people may control their government. The old method of making party nominations at conventions or meetings of the voters of the party was abolished. A law passed in 1899 provides for the registration of all voters, with designation of the party to which they belong — Democratic, Republican, Independent, or other, as the case may be. At an election held in May the voters of each party select the candidates whose names are to appear on the ballot sheet at the following November election. This, the direct primary, permits the voters of a party to have a direct choice in naming their candidates.

The recall. Another device for giving the people a closer control over their government was adopted in 1908. This is the recall. Any officer elected by the people may be recalled by them if a petition is signed by a number of persons equal to at least twenty-five per cent of the votes cast at the previous election for judge of the supreme court. In this event a new election is called, and the voters are required to decide between the man toward whom the recall is directed and any other candidate they may choose to name. If defeated, the officer retires; if he obtains a majority of the votes, he retains his office.

Woman's demand for suffrage. From the beginning Oregon has treated her woman citizens rather better than other states have done. Under the Donation Land Law of 1850 the wife held half the claim in her own right. The constitution of 1857 provides that property held by a woman at the time of her marriage, or afterwards acquired by gift, shall not be subject to the debts of the husband. But for a long time the laws failed in other ways to give equal rights to women. Some seventy-five years ago women began to demand rights equal to those of men, including the right to vote. Soon the women of Oregon began to organize to secure such rights.

The Oregon woman who most furthered the success of the movement for equal rights for women was Mrs. Abigail Scott Duniway. Mrs. Duniway was a remarkable woman who in 1852 came to Oregon in an ox-wagon train. When only seventeen years old she was engaged in teaching school. She was married when very young and she reared a large family of children. After her marriage she not only opened a school at Lafayette, but she cared for an invalid husband and conducted a successful millinery business at Albany as well. About 1871 she became interested in the woman's rights movement and helped to organize the Oregon Equal Suffrage Association. In that year she founded a newspaper, *The New Northwest,* to champion this cause. She and her associates worked zealously to secure the vote for women. In 1878 women were given the right to vote in school elections and on all other school matters. In 1884 the question of equal suffrage was submitted to a vote at the general election, and

was defeated. Through the initiative it was placed on the ballot at four different times, and at last, in 1912, it carried. There were 61,265 votes for the measure, 57,104 votes against it. Mrs. Duniway lived to draw up with her own hand the proclamation signed by Governor Oswald West which announced the victory of the champions of equal suffrage. As the result of this long struggle and of the final victory of the measure, almost

OREGON STATE TUBERCULOSIS HOSPITAL

all the discriminations against women have been removed from the statute books of Oregon.

Oregon in the World War. In 1914 war broke out between the principal European powers — Great Britain, France, Russia, and later Italy, on the one side, and Germany, Austria-Hungary, and Turkey on the other. Eventually most of the smaller states of Europe and of the whole world were drawn into the struggle on one side or the other.

Because of her position on this side of the Atlantic

Ocean the United States managed to keep out of the war for more than two years. Finally, however, because of Germany's ruthless submarine policy, which included the destruction of American vessels and the consequent loss of American lives, the United States declared war on that country in April, 1917.

The first call made upon Oregon was for a mobilization of her state militia. That was done within a few hours. By the end of the year 1917 the Third Oregon Infantry, consisting of two thousand men, had been sent oversea. Oregon was the first of the states to complete a census of men of military age; too, her young men were prompt to volunteer for military service. Although the first draft called for 7,387 men from Oregon, all but 717 of that number had already been supplied by volunteers. In all, Oregon furnished 37,758 men and women to the armed forces during the World War. Of those, 20,029 were volunteers and the others were enlisted under the Selective Service Act. Of all the states, Oregon had the highest percentage of volunteers. Of the state's soldiers, 1,034 were killed or died of disease, and 1,063 were wounded in battle. A total of 256 were decorated by the United States government or some other for valiant and distinguished service during the war.

The people of Oregon were also decidedly generous with their money in support of the World War. They were asked to give $2,038,000 to the Red Cross and other organizations; they actually subscribed $3,148,000, which was fifty-five per cent in excess of the amount asked. During the sale of Liberty Loan bonds, by means

of which our government secured money to carry on the war, Oregon's share was placed at $61,500,000. Her people subscribed $88,106,000, which was thirty-eight per cent more than the allotted quota.

State aid to World War soldiers. Oregon has been generous in extending aid to her returned soldiers and sailors. An act, adopted by vote of the people in 1919, provided money for the veterans who wished to continue their education. As much as two hundred dollars a year for as long as four years was given to each ex-service man for this purpose. A total of two hundred thousand dollars a year was thus furnished by the state.

Still further provision for those who served in the World War was made by another act adopted by the people in 1921. This measure provided a loan not to exceed three thousand dollars, or a cash bonus not greater than five hundred dollars, to each man or woman who had enlisted; the amount of either loan or bonus depended on the length of service.

ADDITIONAL READINGS

CAREY, C. H. *History of Oregon.* Chaps. 41 and 42.
SCHAFER, JOSEPH. *History of the Pacific Northwest*, pp. 207-218; 303-306.

QUESTIONS

1. Point out some differences between the government of Oregon as a territory and its government as a state.
2. Name some county officers other than those mentioned in this chapter.
3. Why was the date of holding state elections changed from June to November?

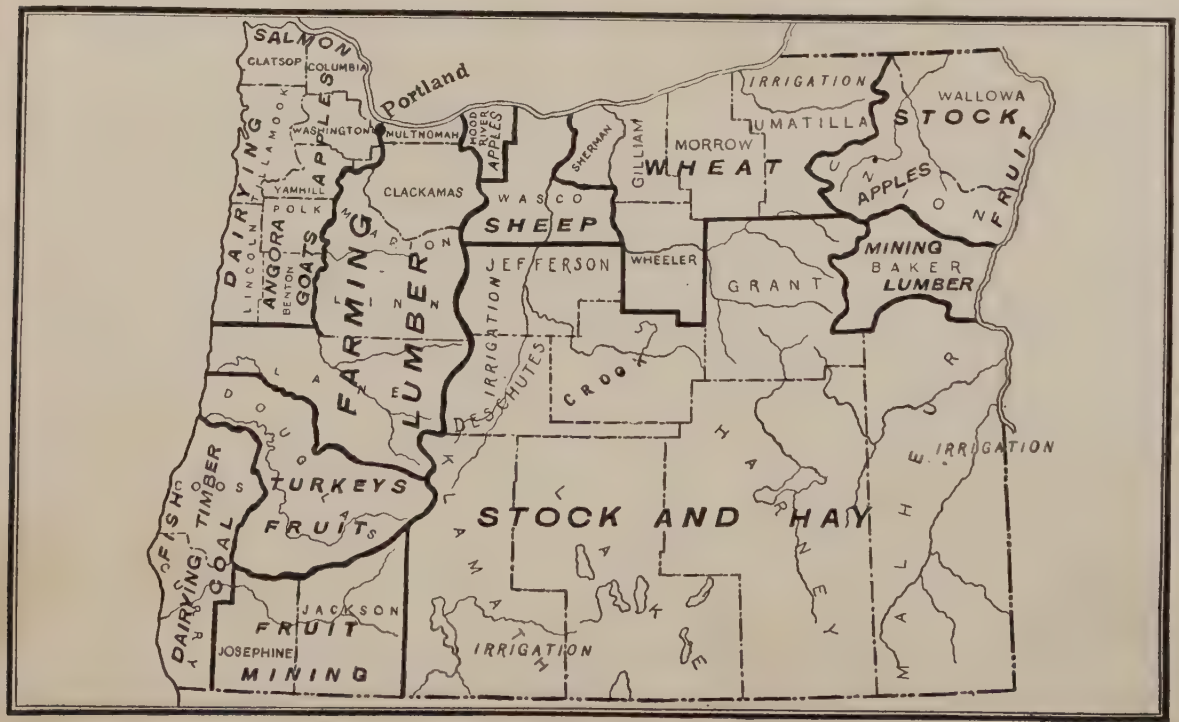
4. Who were permitted to vote in 1859? Since that year what changes have been made in regulations regarding the qualifications for voters?
5. Compare an election day of today with one of 1862.
6. Why were some of the territorial governors Whigs and some Democrats?
7. Why did the majority of people belong to the Democratic party in the early years of Oregon's statehood?
8. What caused a division in the Democratic party during the sixties?
9. Why has the Democratic party been able to elect the governor in a majority of elections since 1858?
10. How do you explain the fact that, in recent years, a great majority of voters register as Republicans?
11. What are some things now undertaken by the state government but not attempted in 1859?
12. Why was the "Oregon System" adopted? Explain each part of it.
13. Why did the United States go to war against Germany in 1917?
14. In what ways has Oregon aided her citizens who enlisted for the World War? Why has such aid been given to them?

CHAPTER XX

ECONOMIC PROGRESS SINCE 1870

HAVING now got clearly in mind the various steps in the historical development of Oregon from the earliest times to the present, and having become familiar with the early economic progress of our state, it will be well to get some notion of conditions existing in Oregon today so far as concerns population, commerce, and industry. The present greatness of our state depends upon all those factors. To the extent that the future citizens of Oregon are acquainted with the possibilities of the state and with its attitude toward economic progress, just to that extent can those future citizens coöperate most effectively to further the progress upon which all future advancement rests.

The increase in Oregon's population. In 1870 the population of Oregon was 91,923. During the next twenty years that number almost doubled. During the years from 1890 to 1900 the growth of population was slower, having shown an increase of only about a third. In 1910 the population was 672,000; by 1920 it had increased to 783,000, which was only slightly more than sixteen per cent in excess of that of 1910. This slow increase was probably due to the World War and the consequent decrease of immigration from Europe. Although in 1920 there were fourteen states having a popu-



THE INDUSTRIES OF OREGON

lation smaller than that of Oregon, yet our own still ranks among the states which have a relatively small population, as it always has done.

Character of the population. More than ninety-eight per cent of the people of Oregon are white, and most of them are native Oregonians or immigrants from other states of the Union. There are, however, approximately two hundred thousand people of foreign birth or foreign parentage in the state. The nations most largely represented are the Germans, Canadians, English, Swedes, Irish, Norwegians, Finlanders, and Danes, in the order named. The Chinese population decreased from ten thousand in 1910 to three thousand in 1920, while the Japanese population showed an increase from twenty-five hundred in 1910 to four thousand in 1920. The negro population, which doubled during that decade, was twenty-one hundred in 1920. There were also forty-five hundred Indians in Oregon in that year.

The growth of Oregon cities. Up to the present time Oregon has developed only one large city — Portland. In 1900 more than two-thirds of the people either lived on farms or depended upon the soil for a living, and even today the state may be regarded as chiefly an agricultural region. Since 1900, however, conditions have changed rapidly. At present fifty per cent of the people live in cities having a population of more than two thousand five hundred. The urban, or city population, is increasing much more rapidly than is the rural, or country, population. This drift to the cities is strikingly illustrated by the census returns for 1910 and 1920. These figures show that between 1910 and 1920 the

population of cities increased at a rate of more than a hundred thirty per cent, while the increase for the remainder of the state was only about thirty per cent. However, since more than one-third of the total population of the state is in Portland and Multnomah counties, and as seventy per cent of the population classed as urban is located in this single urban center, the population of the remainder of the state may still be considered rural in character.

The growth of Portland. In 1870 the population of Portland was about nine thousand; in 1920 it was 258,288; in 1925 its estimated population was 360,000. The growth of Portland has been due to the fact that almost from the beginning it has been the most important commercial center in the state.

The increase of taxable wealth. While the growth of Oregon's population has been remarkable, there has been a still more remarkable increase in the wealth of the state. In 1870 the assessed wealth of the state amounted to only twenty-nine and a half million dollars. By 1900 that had increased to almost a hundred eighteen million dollars, and in 1910 it was nearly eight hundred forty-five million dollars, or more than seven times that of 1900. In 1920 the wealth of the state amounted to more than a billion dollars. Not only has the total wealth increased very greatly, but the property owned by each inhabitant now amounts to more than three times as much as it did in 1870.

The great increase in the wealth of the state is mainly due to the development of natural resources such as timber, agricultural lands, and water power furnished

by the rivers. Besides those lands naturally adapted to farming, vast irrigation projects have opened new agricultural lands for occupation, thus adding greatly to the wealth of the state. The growth of population which has caused an increased demand for farm lands and city property has added to their value. New industries and the introduction of diversified agriculture have also been responsible for an increase in wealth.

Development of river transportation. Another cause for the increasing wealth and prosperity of Oregon has been the development of better means of transportation and communication between the different parts of the state and with the outside world. Easy access to distant places promotes production and industry.

The rivers were the first highways within the state. At first there was no more rapid way to travel than by canoe or by boats paddled or rowed by men. Then, as the state became more densely populated, steamboats were built for river traffic. The first steamboat built to run from one river port to another, by name the *Columbia,* was launched at Astoria on July 4, 1850. It made the trip between Astoria and Oregon City in twenty-six hours. In the same year another river steamer was built at Milwaukie. Fifteen dollars was the fare from Portland to Astoria on those early boats. The next year boats began to run on the upper Columbia River and on the Willamette River above Oregon City. Since the falls at the latter place were a serious obstacle to traffic, in 1862 a portage railroad was built from Oregon City to Canemah, a distance of one mile. The cars were drawn by mules. It was not until 1873, how-

ever, that a canal and locks which permitted steamboats to pass through were completed at the falls.

Lines of river steamboats. Steamboat companies were organized after 1860, and those gained a monopoly of the traffic on the Willamette and Columbia rivers. The companies made great profits, especially after the

Courtesy of the Oregon Historical Society

THE PONY: THE FIRST LOCOMOTIVE USED IN OREGON

discovery of gold in the eastern Oregon country, because a heavy passenger and freight traffic grew up between Portland and the mining region at that time. In 1865 there were thirty river steamers navigating the Columbia and Willamette rivers and their tributaries. There was a daily boat from Portland to The Dalles;

a trip was made semi-weekly from there to Wallula; and a boat went three times a week from Wallula to Lewiston. Twice a week a boat went up the Willamette River to Corvallis, and once a week to Eugene.

In a single year, 1864, thirty-six thousand passengers and more than twenty-one thousand tons of freight were carried up the Columbia River. The freight consisted of supplies for the military posts and mining

A STEAMER LEAVING THE CASCADE LOCKS

camps east of the Cascade Mountains. Portages by means of wagons and tramways had to be made at the rapids of the cascades and above the dalles of the Columbia River. During the years 1861 to 1863 railroads were built to carry the traffic at those portages. The obstacles to river navigation were later overcome by means of canals and locks constructed by the United States government.

The company that operated the boats to the upper Columbia River country made large fortunes for its

stockholders during the years between 1860 and 1880. It charged very high fares for passengers and high rates for freight. In 1863 the fare from Portland to Umatilla, a distance of two hundred seventeen miles, cost about thirty dollars. Forty-five dollars per ton was charged for freight transported the same distance. It cost ten times as much to carry freight on the Columbia River as it did on the Mississippi River during the same period. The Oregon Steam Navigation Company enjoyed a monopoly of the traffic because it controlled the portages at the cascades and the dalles of the Columbia River.

Stagecoach travel in early days. Although travel by steamer was comfortable, it was slow; for that reason stagecoach lines were early established to give quicker service. After 1850 there was a stagecoach line between St. Joseph, Missouri and Sacramento, California, and it was then possible for those who did not wish to drive to Oregon in their own conveyances to go by stagecoach. The trip from St. Joseph to Sacramento was made in sixty days. From Sacramento it was necessary to go to San Francisco and then to travel from that point to Oregon by a coastwise boat. In 1860 the California and Oregon Stage Company began to run daily stagecoaches from Portland to Sacramento. It took six days to make the trip. Other stagecoach lines were established from The Dalles, by way of Walla Walla and Boise, to Salt Lake City, Utah. As those stagecoaches carried mails and express, they supplied the towns along the routes with more frequent mail service. In 1870 a daily mail service was established between

Portland and Corvallis. The mail was carried by stagecoaches which were drawn by four or six horses.

The first telegraph lines. The first telegraph line across the continent was completed to San Francisco in 1861. Local telegraph lines were in operation as far northward as Yreka, California, by 1858. From that point news was carried into Oregon by stagecoach. A telegraph line was built from Portland to Corvallis in 1856, but it was not successful. A new line that connected Portland with the California terminus was begun in 1862 and completed in March, 1864. Portland celebrated that event, and in honor of the occasion messages were exchanged between the mayor of Portland, Oregon, and the mayor of Portland, Maine.

The first railroads in Oregon. The first railroads in Oregon were those built between 1861 and 1863. They were constructed to carry passengers and freight over the portages at the cascades and the dalles of the Columbia River. The cars were drawn on iron tracks by steam locomotives. Those railways were owned by the company that operated the steamboats on the Columbia River.

Railroads in the Willamette Valley. The first railroads to operate independently were built in the Willamette Valley. As early as 1850 a project was launched to build a railroad from St. Helens on the Columbia River to Lafayette in Yamhill County. Nothing came of this, however. In 1863 and 1864 surveys were made for a railroad from Sacramento, California, to Portland, Oregon. The line was to pass through Jacksonville and to follow the course of the Willamette River

to Portland. The construction of a railway to connect Sacramento, California, and Omaha, Nebraska, was begun in 1863 and completed in 1869. At once the people of Oregon were anxious to build railroad lines through the Columbia and Willamette valleys to connect with this overland railway.

In April, 1868, ground was broken at Portland for two railroads — one to run on the western side of the Willamette River, the other on the eastern side. The construction of those roads progressed very slowly. Only ten miles of the east-side railway, which became known as the Oregon and California Railway, had been built by November, 1869. The line had been built as far as Salem by September, 1870, and as far as Albany by December of that year. It reached to Eugene in October, 1871, and to Roseburg in November, 1872. In 1871 passenger fares were five cents a mile on that road. Because of a lack of money to continue construction, Roseburg was the terminus of the Oregon and California Railway until 1881. Construction toward the south was resumed in 1881, the line was extended to Ashland in May, 1884, and was connected with the California terminus, south of that place, in November, 1887. Later the Southern Pacific Railroad came into control of the line.

The West Side Railroad. Although begun in 1868, little progress was made with the railroad on the west side of the Willamette River until 1871. In that year it was completed as far as Cornelius, and the next year the line was extended to Saint Joseph on the Yamhill River. No further work was done until January, 1879,

at which time the tracks were laid to Corvallis. Finally, in 1883, the line was built through to Eugene. This line, too, became a part of the Southern Pacific system.

Railroad connections with the East. The first all-rail connection with the eastern part of the United States came by way of the Columbia River route, and not by way of the Willamette River and the California connection. A railroad was built along the Columbia River from Portland to connect with lines built westward through Missoula, Montana. Those east and west lines met in August, 1883. The first train for the Atlantic coast left Portland, October 2, 1883, and arrived in New York City ten days later. Next year the Columbia River railroad was extended to Huntington where it joined another line from Granger, Wyoming, at which point it connected with the Union Pacific Railway. This line gave Oregon a second all-rail connection with the East. The third connection came with the completion of the Oregon and California Railway in 1887.

The period between the years 1870 and 1890 was marked by great activity in railroad building. Besides the longer and more important lines many short lines were constructed throughout the Willamette Valley, and a line was built from Corvallis to Yaquina Bay. Since that time railroads have been built to connect the Willamette Valley with the coast at Astoria, Tillamook, and Coos Bay, and a line runs up the valley of the Deschutes River as far as Bend.

Public aid to railroads. Encouragement was given to the building of railroads by liberal grants of public lands. The federal government had made such grants

to private companies for the building of many wagon roads in Oregon, and afterward grants were made to the railroad companies. As much as twelve thousand acres were given for each mile of track constructed. Under the terms of the grant to the Oregon and California Railway, this land was not to be sold for more than two dollars and a half an acre.

The state government also gave aid to railroads by exempting them from the payment of taxes for a term of years and by giving them grants of land. Those communities that wanted railroads gave them a right of way and a money bonus. Portland raised a hundred thousand dollars for the West Side Railroad.

Growth of automobile traffic. The registration of automobiles in Oregon was first required in 1905. In that year there were only two hundred eighteen automobiles in the entire state. The next year there were even fewer, only a hundred forty-two. License fees were first charged in 1907; in that year seven hundred eight dollars was collected from the two hundred thirty-six owners of machines. By the end of 1924 the number of automobiles had increased to almost a hundred ninety thousand and the license fees amounted to about four million dollars.

Good roads for Oregon. The increased number of automobiles in Oregon brought about a demand for better roads. In 1917 the legislature enacted a law which provided for the creation of a state highway commission and authorized it to construct and maintain a system of modern highways throughout the state. At the present time the roads included under the super-

vision of the state highway commission total four thousand four hundred fifty miles. By the end of 1924 eight hundred seventy-nine miles of highway had been paved and a thousand nine hundred forty-four miles surfaced with gravel. At the present time about thirteen hundred miles of highway are yet to be improved.

More than seventy-five million dollars have already been spent for the improvement of highways in this state. That money was raised by issuing bonds, by taxation, and by licensing automobiles. Part of the money has been furnished by the United States government. Money for paying interest on the bonds and for keeping the highways in repair is secured by licensing automobiles and from the proceeds of a three cent tax on each gallon of gasoline sold within the state.

The progress of agriculture in Oregon. The progress of agriculture in this state is shown by the annual increase in the number of acres under cultivation. In 1870 there were about eighteen million acres under cultivation; in 1920 there were more than fifty million acres planted. During the same period the value of farm lands in the state increased from something more than twenty-two million dollars to more than eight hundred million dollars; the value of farm crops increased from seven million dollars in 1870 to more than forty-five million dollars in 1909, and to more than a hundred thirty-two million dollars in 1919. If the value of live stock and dairy products be included in the total yield, then in recent years the value of the state's agricultural products may be estimated at from three hundred million dollars to more than four hundred million.

In 1870 the Oregon farm of average size contained about three hundred fifteen acres and was worth about four thousand dollars; in 1920 the farm of average size contained about two hundred seventy acres and was valued at more than sixteen thousand dollars. During the same period the number of farms under cultivation in the state increased from seven thousand five hundred to some fifty thousand.

Oregon's cereal crops. From the time of the first settlements in the state the grain crops have been the most valuable agricultural products of Oregon. In 1919 the value of the cereal crops was about fifty million dollars, the value of hay and other forage crops was about forty million dollars, and the value of fruits and nuts was about twenty and a half million dollars. Oregon's annual grain crop is more valuable than the annual catch of fish and it exceeds the annual output of the mineral industries of the state. The annual return from grain is larger than that from any other crop and in value is only exceeded by that of the state's forest products.

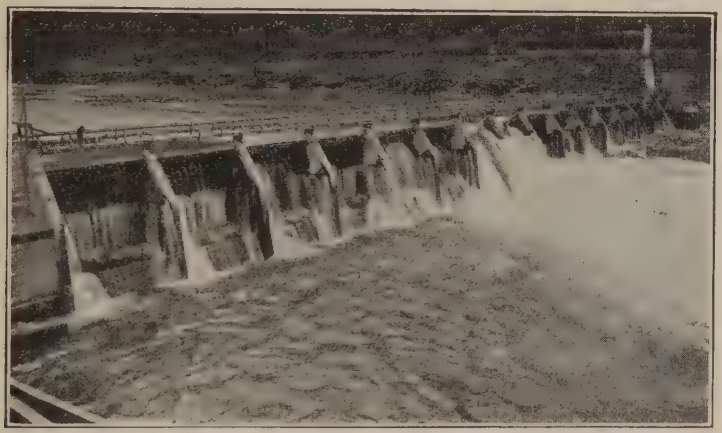
Oregon's wheat crop. The cultivation of wheat has passed through three periods in the Northwest. During the pioneer period wheat was grown in western Oregon where the soil was easily cleared and the rainfall is abundant. The wheat produced in that region is of the large and soft variety. The second period of wheat-growing came with the opening of the great Inland Empire which comprises eastern Washington, northeastern Oregon, and northwestern Idaho. That region now produces most of the wheat grown in the

Northwest. In 1924, Umatilla County, in that section, led the state in the production of wheat; it produced more than six million bushels. The third period of wheat production has come with the opening of irrigated lands. The total yield of wheat for 1924 was about sixteen million bushels for the whole state. This was three million bushels less than was produced in 1919.

The fruit-growing industry. Fruit growing, together with the canning and preserving of fruit, has become an important industry in Oregon. In the production of small fruits, including the different kinds of berries, Oregon ranks fifth among the states of the Union; it produced eighteen million quarts of such fruits in 1919. Of the larger fruits, apples are the most important; the yield in 1924 was about six million boxes, worth as many dollars. Prunes are next in importance. In 1924 some thirty-two million pounds of the dried prunes were produced. The output was worth about three million dollars. Pear orchards yielded about three million boxes of fruit having a value about equal to that of the prune crop.

The growing of hops and vegetables. For many years Oregon has led all other states in hop production; in 1923 about eleven million pounds were produced. That was nearly as much as was raised in all other states and more than the amount used in the whole United States. The crop sold for almost three million dollars. In recent years market gardening has steadily grown in importance, especially in the region near Portland. The vegetable crop is worth from twenty million dollars to thirty million dollars a year.

Reclaiming waste land by irrigation. One of the most striking changes that has been taking place in Oregon during the last twenty-five years is the reclamation of large areas of desert land by means of irrigation. This has been accomplished through irrigation projects which include storing the waters of streams by means of dams and bringing it to the land by irrigation canals.



AN IRRIGATION DAM ON THE ROGUE RIVER

Both the United States government and the state government have provided money for irrigation enterprises. Private capital invested in land reclamation companies has furthered the development of the irrigation projects and has added greatly to the wealth of Oregon.

In 1900 a million eight hundred thousand dollars was invested in irrigation enterprises; in 1910 twelve million seven hundred sixty thousand dollars was so invested, that being an increase of five hundred ninety-two per

cent. By 1920 almost twenty-nine million dollars had been invested, an increase of a hundred twenty-six per cent during the last decade.

In 1920 more than nine hundred eighty-six thousand acres had been brought under irrigation, as compared with six hundred eighty-six thousand acres in 1910; this was an increase of forty-four per cent. This acreage meant an addition of nine thousand farms in 1920. The irrigation works in the latter year numbered four thousand seven hundred.

Live stock as a source of wealth. As has been explained, the Hudson's Bay Company in Oregon kept live stock of all kinds near its posts and upon its farms in the earliest period of this region's history. The Willamette Valley Cattle Company brought cattle from California for the early settlers, as has been related. The "cow column" was an important feature of all the immigrant trains from the East. Live stock has constituted an important part of the wealth of Oregon even from early days, and the live stock industry has at all times contributed to the prosperity of the people.

Some sections of central and southeastern Oregon are especially adapted to live stock raising because the rainfall there is too light to insure agricultural crops. It is sufficient, however, to produce grass for cattle and sheep. This region also furnishes summer pasturage in the national forests high up on the grassy meadows of the Cascade Range. In more recent times, with the introduction of irrigation throughout the state, more hay and forage have been produced, thus providing ample feed for the flocks and herds of the rancher. The large

ranches which were once so common have in many sections been broken up into smaller units as irrigation projects have made possible agricultural pursuits that require less acreage than was used for grazing purposes.

In 1919 there were in Oregon two hundred sixteen thousand dairy cattle, six hundred thousand beef cattle,

A FLOCK OF EASTERN OREGON SHEEP

some two million sheep, and nearly three hundred thousand horses. The total value of all live stock in the state in that year was about ninety-eight million dollars.

The output of dairy products. In 1919 the total value of all dairy products, including milk, butter, cheese, and condensed milk, was almost eighteen million dollars, and by 1924 it had increased to twenty-four million

dollars, nearly twenty-five per cent of the combined value of all farm products. In 1923 a cow produced an average of five hundred sixty-three gallons of milk annually; in 1919 the production per cow was five hundred fourteen gallons. This shows that higher grade cattle are being introduced into the state. Tillamook County is the center of the cheese industry, having twenty-nine of the sixty-two factories. There were ninety-seven creameries and eight condensing plants in 1924. In 1923 Oregon shipped over a million pounds of butter and half a million pounds of cheese to San Francisco alone.

The production of sheep and wool. Oregon has become one of the largest wool producing states in the Union. In 1924 fifteen per cent of the wool grown in the United States was produced in Oregon. The sheep grown in this state also excel in the weight of fleece. In 1850 the average weight of an Oregon fleece was only two pounds; in 1923 Oregon led the nation with a wool production of nine pounds per sheep. Again this shows that finer stock is being raised by the farmer and rancher. In 1919 the sheep of the state were valued at twenty-four million dollars, and the sixteen million pounds of wool produced that year sold for eight million dollars. Ten years before almost three million pounds of wool more than that sold in 1919 brought only three million seven hundred thousand dollars. The increased demand for wool was caused by the World War, and consequently the prices paid for raw wool were much higher.

Woolen manufactures in Oregon. Oregon is not only a wool-producing state but a wool-manufacturing state as well. Woolen mills were built at Salem in 1855,

at Oregon City in 1864, and at Brownsville in 1866. Today there are at Pendleton mills that manufacture Indian blankets; there are also woolen and knitting mills at Portland. In 1923 the Oregon woolen mills consumed nine million pounds of raw wool, turned out finished products that were worth nine million dollars, and employed a thousand six hundred fifty persons.

GREAT SAWMILLS AT BEND, OREGON
The Shevlin-Hixon Plant

Manufacturing industries in Oregon. The census of 1919 showed that the most important manufacturing industries in Oregon, ranked according to the value of their output, were lumbering, milling, metal working, meat packing, shipbuilding, canning and preserving of fruits and vegetables, and the canning and preserving of fish. The total number of manufacturing establishments in 1919 was two thousand seven hundred; those

employed about fifty-nine thousand persons, and that year the products made in the factories were valued at nearly three hundred seventy million dollars.

The lumbering industry. The most important of Oregon's industries is lumbering. The growth of that business since 1899 has been very rapid. The relative

A SALMON PACKING PLANT AT ASTORIA

rank of Oregon in lumber production has advanced from twenty-third place in 1899 to ninth place in 1910, to fifth place in 1914, and to third place in 1919. In the latter year the industry gave employment to twenty-two thousand men, and its products were worth almost eighty-five and a half million dollars, or twenty-three per cent of the total of all the state's manufactures.

The production of minerals. From 1850 to 1870 mining was one of the most important industries in Oregon, and, as we have seen, was the cause of the rapid settlement of certain sections of the state. Since that time it has greatly declined in importance as compared with other industries. The average annual production of gold since 1850 has not greatly exceeded a million dollars. The value of gold and silver produced in 1919 was a million two hundred twenty-one thousand dollars. Baker and Grant counties are the principal mining regions. Some coal is mined in the Coos Bay region. The value of this product in 1919 was sixty-three thousand dollars.

Catching and packing salmon. The Indians along the Columbia River depended for their food supply almost entirely upon the salmon that frequent those waters, as we have learned. The early white settlers of the region were consequently not slow to recognize the value of the fish as a source of food. Early in the history of the Northwest the catching and preserving of salmon became an important industry, and even in 1860 a hundred thirty thousand pounds of fish were canned in the Columbia River region. By 1880 almost three million pounds of fish were canned each year. After 1895 the catch began to diminish. To make certain a continuous supply the state has established fish hatcheries along the streams that are visited by the salmon, and these supply millions of young fish every year. During recent years the salmon catch has again become as large as at any time in the earlier history of the state. In 1919 the value of the fish canned in Oregon was more than five

and a half million dollars. Besides the fish that is canned much is preserved by cold storage and sent in a frozen state to other parts of the country.

ADDITIONAL READINGS

CAREY, C. H. *History of Oregon*, pp. 853-864.
SCHAFER, JOSEPH. *History of the Pacific Northwest*, pp. 230-289.

QUESTIONS

1. Why should the population of Oregon include fewer foreign born than that of New York or New Jersey?
2. What are some of the industries that have attracted foreigners to Oregon?
3. Why is it that almost one-third of the people in Oregon live near Portland?
4. Show how a person would have traveled by public conveyance in making a trip from the locality in which you live to Portland and San Francisco fifty years ago.
5. Why are steamboats scarcely used at all as a means of transportation between points within the state of Oregon today? When were they of greatest importance as a means of transportation in Oregon?
6. Locate the places on the rivers where portages and canals with locks had to be constructed. Explain how a boat passes through a canal lock.
7. How would the costs of carrying freight and passengers fifty years ago compare with those of today?
8. Find out the population of your own town or county for 1870 and for 1900. Compare with today's population.
9. What are the most important agricultural products grown in your locality? Rank them in the order of their annual value.

10. What industries besides farming are carried on in your neighborhood? When was each industry established?
11. What are the most important manufacturing enterprises carried on in Oregon? List some that are not mentioned in this chapter.
12. Describe the growth of the railroad systems in Oregon. How do railroads contribute to the industrial life of a community?
13. What is meant by natural resources? Tell all the ways in which the industries of a state are influenced by the natural resources of the region.
14. Why do once important industries die out entirely or become less valuable?

INDEX

Abernethy, George, 154, 155, 250, 263-264.
Academies, establishment of, 270.
Agriculture, 13-14; development of, 125-126; beginnings of, 286-290; progress of, 338-344.
Alaska, 1, 55, 68, 117, 213, 218.
Albatross, the, Captain Winship's boat, 98.
Americans attempt to settle Oregon, 98-100, 132-139.
American interest in Oregon, 58-62, 82-95, 220-221.
American occupation of Oregon, 183-196.
American trappers and fur traders, 59-69, 131-144.
Arrival of a pioneer, 198-204.
Astor, John Jacob, 21, 99-100.
Astor's enterprise in Oregon, 97-109.
Astoria, founding of, 101-102; in possession of the English, 109; returned to the Americans, 109-110.
Automobiles, 336.

Balboa, Vasco de, discovery of the Pacific Ocean by, 39, 41.
Ball, John, teacher of the first school in Oregon, 262-263.
Battle of the Abiqua, 253-254.
Beaver money, coinage of, 296.
Benefit to Oregon of gold discovery, 294-295.
Benton, Thomas H., 194-222.
Bering Sea, 2.
Bering, Vitus, 53.
Bird Woman, 28, 87-89.
Bonneville, Captain B. L. E., 139-141, 183.
"Bostons," 138.
Boone, Daniel, 86.
Boundary dispute, 213, 229.
Boundary treaty with Great Britain, 227.
British fur companies in America, 112-129, 213.
British explore the Columbia River, 68, 97, 103-104; control Oregon, 108-109; gain by joint occupation, 215-216.
Bulfinch, Dr. Charles, 59.
Butte Creek, massacre at, 256.

Cabin homes, 199-201.
California, gold discovered in, 294; as a market for Oregon products, 295.
Capital, location of the, 237-239.
Carver, Jonathan, 76.
Cascade Mountains, 4, 9-11.
Cattle, value of, 343-344.
Causes of Indian troubles, 244-247.
Cayuse War, 159, 247-252.
Cereal crops in Oregon, 339.
Champoeg, development of farms around, 121-122.
Characteristics of the Oregon Country, 11-13.
Character of Oregon population, 328-329.
Chief Gray Eagle, 248-249.
Child welfare, 280-282.
China, 3; trade with, 70.
Churches, early, 210-211; their part in social progress, 278.
Circuit riders, 211-212.
City government, 307.
Civil War, Oregon and the, 313.
Claims, taking up, 199.
Clark, Captain William, 85, 146, 149.
Clearing the land, 201-202.

Coast of the Oregon Country, 3-4.
Coast Range Mountains, 3.
Colleges and universities, 272-273.
Columbia, the ship, 59.
Columbia River, 1; importance of, 5-7; ships on, 5-6.
Columbus, Christopher, 37.
Comcomley, a Chinook chief, 102-103, 109.
Commission form of government, 307.
Commissions, appointment of, 280; functions of, 280.
Committee of Twelve, 174.
Congress gives Oregon a government, 234-235.
Constitution, for Oregon, 305.
Cook, Captain James, explorations of, 48-50; and the Indians, 244.
Coquilles, war with the, 255.
Counties, organization of, 298; government of, 306-307.
Curry, George L., 240-241.
Cushing, Caleb, 185.

Dairy products, output of, 343-345.
Dalles, the, of the Columbia, 10.
Dayton, Treaties of, 22.
Deaf, school for the, 281.
Demand for Oregon, 224-227.
Democratic party, 310, 313.
Direct primary, advantage of, 320.
Donation Land Law, 236-237.
Douglas, James, 232.
Drake, Sir Francis, visits Oregon, 42-43.
Duniway, Mrs. Abigail Scott, 321-322.

Early industrial progress in Oregon, 286-303.
Eastern Oregon, growth of, 299-300; towns in, 300-301.
Economic progress since 1870, 326-348.
Execution of Dr. Whitman's murderers, 253.
Education of Indian children, 32-33.
Edwards, P. L., teacher of mission school, 150.
Education, social progress through, 267-270.
Election, methods of, 307-309.

Factory inspection, 280.
Farms, life on Oregon, 273-274; increase in number of, 338; increase in value of, 338-339.
Farmers, life of, 273-276; grievances of, 315-316; political parties, 316-317.
Father Blanchet, made archbishop, 161.
Ferrelo, Bartholomew, 41.
"Fifty-four forty or fight!", 226-227.
Flathead story, 148-149.
Flour mills, 289-290.
Floyd, Dr. John, 221-222.
Fort George, 109, 112, 114, 117.
Fort Gilliam, 248.
Fort Hall, 137, 138.
Fort Lee, 248.
Fort Ross, 69.
Fort Vancouver, headquarters of the Hudson's Bay Company at, 118-119; daily life at, 119-120; development around, 120-121.
Fort Walla Walla, 113-114, 140, 161.
Fort William, 139.
Free land, 195, 199, 236-237.
French-Canadians in Oregon, 121, 163-165.
French, early explorations by, 73-74.
French Prairie, settlement of, 221.
French woodrangers, 74.
Fruit-growing industry, value of, 340.
Fur brigades, 115, 122-123.

Fur trade in Oregon, 13; nature of, 69-70; Astor and, 97-109; Canada and the, 115.
Fur traders, 55.

Gaines, Governor J. P., 238.
Geography of the Oregon Country, 1-14.
Gilliam, Colonel Cornelius, 248.
Gold, discovery of, in California, 294; in Oregon, 13, 297-298.
Good roads for Oregon, demand for, 337-338; method of financing, 338.
Government in Oregon, 163-181; no need of, 166-167; reasons for wanting, 168-170; Dr. McLoughlin opposes, 174-175; state, 305-306.
Grange, formation of the, 274-276.
Gray, Captain Robert, 21; first voyage of, 60-64; second voyage of, 67-69; Columbia River discovered by, 66-67; gives United States claim to Oregon, 214.
Great Britain, in the Oregon country, 48, 74.
Green, Jonathan S., 147-148.

Harvest time in pioneer days, 207-208.
Hawaiian Islands, importance of, 70-71.
Health officers, 280.
Heceta, Bruno, 47-48.
High prices, 291-292.
High schools, establishment of, 270-272.
Historical information, state promotion of, 282-283.
Hops and vegetables, production of, 340.
Hudson's Bay Company in Oregon, 117-124, 155, 288-290.
Hunt, Wilson Price, 104-108.

Idaho, I.
Immigration, of 1842, 185-186; of 1843, 193-194, 196.
Independent Party, 317.
Indians of Oregon, 16-35; location of tribes, 18-20; disappearance of, 20-21; government of, 22-23; life of, 23-35; traders and, 71; trouble with, 112-113; McLoughlin and the, 126-128; early explorers and, 244-247.
Indian reservations, 259-260.
Indian war of 1855, 255-256.
Indian wars, 244-260.
Industrial schools, 280-281.
Industry, beginnings of, 286-290.
Influences deciding boundary dispute, 227-229.
Initiative, 318, 319-320.
Inland Empire, 11.
Irrigation, waste lands reclaimed by, 341; value of, 341-342; money invested in, 341-342.

Jackson, President Andrew, 146, 184, 222-223.
Jefferson, Mount, 10.
Jefferson, Thomas, 58, 82, 84, 85, 97.
Joint occupation of Oregon, 214-215.
Joseph, a Nez Percé chief, 251.
Juan de Fuca, story of, 40.
Juan de Fuca, Strait of, 3, 7; naming of, 40.

Keith, James, 112.
Kendrick, Captain John, 59-64.
Kelley, Hall J., 184, 222.
"King George Men," 138.

Lady Washington, the, 59.
Lands, waste of school, 265-266.
Lane, Joseph, 196, 235-236.
Later party history in Oregon, 314-315.
Laws, early school, 264-265.
Ledyard, John, plans of, 58-59.
Lee, Captain H. A. G., 247, 250.
Lee, Daniel, 150.
Lee, Jason, 149-155, 183.
Lewis and Clark, 21; expedition of, 82-95, 220.

Lewis, Captain Meriwether, 82, 84-86.
Libraries in Oregon, 284.
Lincoln, Abraham, 311.
Linn, Senator Lewis F., interest in Oregon, 153, 194, 222, 236.
Livestock, early introduction of, 342; as a source of wealth, 342-343.
Logging, 14.
Louisiana Purchase, 82-84.
Lumbering, building of sawmills, 289-290; value of the industry, 346.

Mackenzie, Alexander, 77-80.
Mackenzie, Donald, 107-108, 113-114.
Mandan Indians, 86-87.
Manila galleon, 44-45.
Manila, ships from, 43-46.
Manufacturing, growth of, 303, 345-346.
Maquina, Chief, 23-25, 56, 245.
Marriage customs of the Indians, 26-27.
Marshall, James W., discoverer of gold in California, 294.
Mary's Peak, 3.
McDougal, Duncan, 101-103.
McLoughlin, Dr. John, 21, 118-129, 219-220, 283, 290.
McLoughlin Memorial, 283.
McTavish, Donald, 112.
Meares, Captain John, 56-57, 62-64.
Meek, Joseph L., 143-144, 176, 178-179, 234, 236.
Meek's Cut-off, 189.
Meeting at Champoeg, call for, 174; May 2, 1843, 175-178.
Messengers sent to Washington, 233-234.
Methodist missions, 149-155.
Methods of travel in 1842, 189-193.
Minerals, production of, 347.
Missionaries in Oregon, 146-161; and the "Mountain Men," 165.
Mission Bottom, site of Lee's mission, 150.
Modocs, war with the, 256-258.
Money, lack of in Oregon, 295-296.
Montana, 1.
"Mountain Men," 141-144, 165.

National political parties, 309-310.
Natron Cut-off, first railroad through the Cascade Mountains, 11.
New Albion, 43.
Newell, Robert, 150, 176.
Nez Percé War, 258-259.
Nootka Sound, English at, 49, 56; Americans visit, 61-63.
Normal schools, 273.
Northern boundary of Oregon, 218-219.
Northwest Coast, discovery of, 37-51; settlements on, 57-58; exploration of, 71.
"Northwesters," work of the, 117.
Northwest Fur Company, 109.

Ogden, Peter Skene, 123-124, 129, 159.
Oregon Agricultural College, 273.
Oregon, name, 1, 74-77, 221.
Oregon City, 21.
Oregon Country, geography of, 2; discovery of, 2-3; coast of, 3-7; characteristics of, 11-13; natural resources of, 13-14.
Oregon Emigration Society, purpose of the, 153.
Oregon Exchange Company, beaver money issued by, 296.
Oregon becomes a state, 240-242.
"Oregon fever," 224.
Oregon Historical Society, 283.
Oregon Humane Society, 283.
Oregon Institute, 155.
"Oregon Rifles," organization of, 247-248.
"Oregon System" of government, 318-322.

Oregon as a territory, 231-242.
Overland search for the Western Sea, 73-80.

Pacific Fur Company, 21, 97-110.
Pacific fur trade, 53-71.
Pacific Ocean, 3, 39; search for, 73-80.
Palmer, Joel, 250, 260.
Parker, Samuel, 21, 22, 155-156, 184.
Patrons of Husbandry, 274-276.
Pennoyer, Sylvester, 317.
People's Power League, 318.
Peoria Party, 184.
Perez, Juan, 47.
Philippine Islands, trade with, 43-46.
Pioneer church, passing of the, 277-278.
Pioneers, why attracted to Oregon, 194-195.
Pioneer life in Oregon, 198-212.
Planting and cultivation of land, 202-204.
Political parties in Oregon, rise of, 309-310; later history of, 314-315.
Polk, James K., 227.
Populist party, 317.
Population of Oregon, growth of, 171-172, 298-299; increase in, 326-328; character of, 328.
Portland, founding of, 301-302; growth of, 329.
Provisional Government, formation of, 177-178; raising money for, 178; officers, 177; changes in, 180-181; laws passed by, 181, 231.
Puget Sound, 7, 51.

Railroads, early, 334; in the Willamette Valley, 334-336; connection with the East, 336; public aid for, 336-337.
Recall, meaning and purpose of, 320.
Referendum, meaning of the term, 318; at work, 319-320.
Rendezvous, 131-132.
Republican and Union parties, 311-312.
Rivers and inlets of the Pacific Coast, 4.
River transportation, development of, 330-333.
Roads and travel in early Oregon, 206-207.
Rogers, Major Robert, 74-76.
Roman Catholic missionaries, 160-161.
Roman Catholic schools, 160-161, 263.
Ross, Alexander, 21, 28, 114.
Rogue River Range, 4.
Rogue River War, beginning of, 254-255.
Rogue River, 4; valley of, 9.
Rule of the British fur companies, 112-129.
Russians, in Alaska, 53; explorations by, 53, 68; decide to seize Oregon, 97-98.
Russian-American Fur Company, 68-69.

Sacajawea, the Bird Woman, 28, 87-89.
Salmon fishing and packing, 347-348.
Schools, the first, 208-209, 262-265.
Sea otter, hunting the, 54-55.
Settlements on the Northwest Coast, 57-58.
Sheep-raising, 344.
Shipping, beginning of, 126.
Simpson, Sir George, 148.
Siskiyou Mountains, 4.
Slacum, William A., 184, 223.
Slavery, among the Indians, 29-30; forbidden in Oregon, 242; question during Civil War, 311-313.
Smith, Jedediah, adventures of, 132-134.
Social Hygiene Society, 283-284.
Social progress in Oregon, 262-284.

Soldiers' Home, 282.
Southern boundary of Oregon, how secured, 216-217.
Southern Oregon, settlement of, 296-297; gold discovered in, 297-298.
Spaniards on the Northwest Coast, 41, 57.
Spanish voyages, importance of, 47.
Stagecoach travel, 333-334.
State aid to World War soldiers, 324.
State government, 305-306; changes in, 317-322.
State Grange, function of, 276.
State, Oregon as a, 305-324.
State, its part in social progress, 278-284.

Taxes, school, 265.
Telegraph lines, 334.
The Golden Hind, 42-43.
The Northwest America, 56, 62.
Thompson, David, 97, 103-104.
Thorn, Captain Jonathan, 100-101.
Timber, 10, 14.
Tonquin, voyage of the, 100-101.
Towns, growth of, 292-293.
Trail, the Oregon, 109, 186-188.
Travelers, early American, 183-185.
Treaties with the Indians, 22, 259-260.
Tyler, President John, 185, 225.

Umpqua River Valley, 9.
Universities and colleges, 272-273.

Vancouver, George, explorations of, 50-51, 66; the Indians and, 244.
Viscaino, Sebastian, 46.
Viva voce, method of voting, 308.
Voting, early plan, 308; dissatisfaction with, 308-309.

War of 1812, 108, 109.
Washington, 1; formation of Territory of, 239-240.
Wealth, increase of taxable, 329-330; sources of, 329-348.
Western Oregon, valleys of, 7-9.
Wheat, sold to Hudson's Bay Company, 288-289; overproduction of, 289; periods of production, 339-340.
White, Dr. Elijah, 151, 171-173, 185-186, 224.
Whitman, Dr. Marcus, mission of, 155-159; trouble with the Indians, 157-158; journeys back East, 158-159; returns to Oregon, 159; massacre of, 159; school opened by, 263.
Waiilatpu Mission, 156, 157.
Wilkes, Captain Charles, 21, 184, 223-224.
Willamette River, valley of, 8-9; Indians of, 21-22.
Willamette University, 155.
Winship, Nathan, attempts to settle in Oregon, 98.
"Wolf Meetings," purpose of the, 173-174.
Woman's suffrage, 321-322.
Women of the Indian tribes, their place, 26; their work, 27-28.
Woolen, manufacture of, 344-345.
Wool, production of, 344-345.
Workmen's compensation law, provisions of the, 279-280.
World War, Oregon and the, 322-324.
Wyeth, Nathaniel J., 134-139, 183.
Wyoming, 1.

Young, Ewing, 128, 151, 170, 171.